

Introduction to the Jesse Prince interviews

by FACTNet

In late August 1998, FACTNet director Lawrence Wollersheim conducted about 20 hours of interviews with Jesse Prince, who was formerly the second-in-command of Scientology. The purpose of FACTNet's interviews was to collect information for the Federal Bureau of Investigation (FBI), to aid the FBI's research into illegalities performed by Scientology.

The testimony Jesse has provided in his interviews with FACTNet is extremely disturbing, even to those already familiar with much of Scientology's wrongdoings. Jesse has witnessed the leadership of Scientology bugging the homes of its own "ministers"; the leadership of Scientology laughing over a former colleague's death; the leadership of Scientology ordering illegal copyright registrations, destroying court evidence, tampering with judges and fixing an election in a small California town. Jesse has seen members forced to work so many hours they endure permanent injuries; he has seen members forced to run around a pole in the desert for 10 hours a day, day after day; and he has seen members die because they were refused proper medical treatment. He has observed manipulative treatment of John Travolta and Tom Cruise, Scientology's celebrities. And much more.

What has been provided by Jesse Prince's interviews is a look into the very highest levels of Scientology and the pervasive criminality that takes place there. The information is so powerful that FACTNet has not only submitted transcripts of the interview tapes to the FBI, but is also making them available worldwide through the FACTNet web site.

Jesse was a Scientologist from 1976 to 1992 and served in the highest ranks in Scientology's powerful Religious Technology Center (RTC), even serving on its Board of Directors. After leaving in 1992, Jesse spent six years working to reconstruct a life outside Scientology, but did not speak publicly about his Scientology experience until 1998.

Jesse's silence was due to his vast knowledge of criminal activities pervading Scientology, his possible culpability for having partaken in illegal acts on behalf of Scientology, and his fear of Scientology's vengeance. He has shown great courage and has put himself at considerable personal risk to tell the world what he knows about Scientology. Jesse's speaking out despite the death threats he has received has provided a beacon of hope. He has sent a profound message to others, to help them come forward. Now it appears that other high-level Scientology executives may also be coming forward with their stories.

The information in these transcripts is so important that FACTNet believes it could be dangerous not to release it to the public. Hopefully, exposing these allegations will

eliminate a great deal of future harm by preventing people from joining Scientology and convincing current members to leave.

Also for this reason, FACTNet encourages the further dissemination of these transcripts, as appropriate, to governments, embassies, leaders, law enforcement agencies, media, and especially families of current Scientologists. FACTNet recommends getting Jesse Prince's series of articles to everyone currently in Scientology. Upon reading the transcripts, even the most hardened Scientologists will have powerful doubts about

whether they have been profoundly and cruelly deceived.

Complete, uncensored transcripts available at...

http://www.factnet.org/Scientology/jesse_tapes.html

Tape 1, August 16, 1998

Lawrence Wollersheim and Jesse Prince

L: Testing 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 10. Today is the 16th of August, 1998. This is Lawrence Wollersheim, about 5:00 in the afternoon, sitting with Jesse Prince. We're just going to talk about his time in Scientology and ask him different things. And this is my voice, the other voice will be Jesse's.

J: The voice he's referring to is this one right here.

L: OK. Tell me, the other day we were talking about Scientology tampering with judges. You mentioned that you had been interviewed by the FBI once before and that they had asked you about it but you didn't tell them what was going on. Were you in Scientology?

J: Yes I was. I told them the truth as I understood it at that time.

L: You told them what you knew at that time, the truth as you understood it at that time. It was concerning a tampering with a judge. What was that judge's name?

J: Judge Mary Anna Fouser.

L: This was in a case?

J: A RICO suit brought against David Mayo, the AAC. CSC and RTC brought the action.

L: What specifically did Scientology do to tamper with this judge, and if you can just try to describe what your knowledge is, and who was involved in doing it and if you know what they specifically did, or you don't know what they did. Kind of, a person, an action, as much detail as you can have.

J: What I would like to do is just start at the beginning. Any time a judge appears in a case in Scientology, good, bad, or indifferent, a common practice is to do an ODC, particularly if he's a hostile judge, or is perceived to be a hostile judge. ODC means overt data collection. What would happen is, you'd get some guys normally from OSA Invest, and they would go and get as much public record as they could about that particular judge.

L: Could you state what OSA Invest is?

J: Office of Special Affairs Investigation Unit. It's kind of like a low scale FBI investigatory group that investigates enemies and critics of Scientology.

L: Great, go on.

J: They do an ODC. If it goes further and the judge is really hostile, what they will do is go and start interviewing the associates of the judge, like trying to find out information in an innocuous way, or in a harsh way, to create intimidation. That's a common practice, they do it with every judge. With Mary Anna Fouser, when we got on this case, an ODC was done on her. They kind of looked up her records as a judge, looked up her cases, found out where she lives, everything that they possibly could. Through lawyers and investigators, found as much personal information as they could about the judge, what she likes, what she doesn't like, this kind of thing. Before any case is started, you have the profile of the judge, you have a profile of a prosecutor, if it is a prosecutor, or a profile of the opposing litigating attorneys. In my particular case, I was involved as a witness in the AAC case, I came on as a witness, as a director of the Religious Technology Center, and a person that had high credentials in their technological business. We were in the case and what I was doing in the case was comparing the "NED for OTs" [stands for "New Era Dianetics for Operating Thetans"] materials to the "NED for OTs" materials that David Mayo himself had issues. Now, I'm just going to speak as I am thinking at the time. Of course, I have other ideas about that now. I took and compared the "NED for OTs" issue #1 and David Mayo's the "NED for OTs" issue #1, which were so amazingly similar to what the church had and he produced. Of course, subsequently, that wouldn't be a surprise because Mayo wrote it anyway. At the time I was being a little church person, Mayo wrote 98% of it based on random crazy notes. At that point, when I was on the stand, and I brought up, I had it in my jacket pocket, and I pulled out these papers, and there was an immediate objection from the other attorneys, I forget their names. The judge had us meet back in chambers. The opposition attorneys and our attorneys went back in the chambers, and we just looked at the papers because the objection was that they hadn't had a chance to review that evidence. What actually happened in evidence in chambers is they had a chance to see the notes that I had written, which were relatively cryptic. We had also procured the copy of David Mayo's material to even do the comparison with. He was holding his material in confidence and we sent investigators in there. Bob Mithoff was a deep cover plant for us, and he just got copies of their material so that we could do this. Their organization was infiltrated in more ways than one, as far as the amount of pressure and stress that we brought against AAC. Back to Mary Anna Fouser chambers. In effect, we were looking at these differences and comparing the material, that was pretty much done in back chambers. I don't think the opposition attorneys were very happy about it. Subsequently, when we came back in and I finished my testimony and Ray Mithoff came up as a witness and he spoke for a while. We were granted an injunction a TRO against David Mayo using those materials, which, in effect, closed down the AAC. Like I say in retrospect, as he wrote 98% of that stuff anyway, he had all the right in the world to use it. From the tactics and the things that I just described to you, same thing has subsequently happened to CAN. You put in deep cover plants that no one ever suspects, and you just wear them out. What happened is...

L: Can I ask you a specific question, and you will be able to keep your train of thought?

J: What I'm getting to is the judge tampering part.

L: My question is this, did RTC and Scientology knowingly claim that these were their copyrights, knowing that they were not their copyrights, that David Miscavige was the true author of these documents?

J: ..not David Miscavige, David Mayo.

L: David Mayo was the true author of these documents, and that he was the true copyright holder according to the copyright laws?

J: This is what I know about that. Every one of those issues had DM at the bottom of it, they were 1978-79 issues. He wrote them all. They you have LRH/DM, and whoever the typist was. In effect, Mayo sat down and authored those things. Whether he authored them from LR Hubbard notes or personal meanings is not anything that I could speak on because I wasn't there.

L: You don't know if he did or not.

J: I do know for a fact. I do know, subsequently in the church, in seeing how they issue materials, a lot of it, it could just be something with three lines on it, like this from L. Ron Hubbard, they turn it into a two page bulletin. It's a process of getting a little piece here, and a little piece there, and then someone actually composing it and making it make sense. In its original state.

L: The current practice is that in a bulletin that says it was written by L. Ron Hubbard may have as little as 2 or 3 lines out of 2 pages.

J: And he's never seen it or laid eyes on it.

L: OK. Is it your understanding that they know this and yet they claim the whole policy was written by L. Ron Hubbard?

J: Sure.

L: They present it as completely authored by L. Ron Hubbard. Is it your understanding that the average staff member, or member of the church, who receives this policy, with L. Ron Hubbard's name at the bottom truly believes that this was written by L. Ron Hubbard?

J: Oh yes, they truly believe it, they have to read it to each other. If they make a method 9, do a stumble, oh yes. They have a separate organization out there called RTRC which is the actual organization that compiles and issues all these letters, these HCOBs, BTBs, whatever.

L: It's basically a manufacturing plant?

J: Right.

L: And it gives the apparenacy, if I'm understanding this, no matter how much is written by L. Ron Hubbard, it generates it as if the whole document was written by L. Ron Hubbard.

J: Exactly. Like you sit down, especially towards the end, and then some of these concepts and issues are not even anything that L. Ron Hubbard had to speak on. The reason that I'm speaking about this in such a way that's kind of detailed, is because they have an issue authority network in place in Scientology, where anything that is issued goes through IA and then is issued to all the orgs. I was the senior person over issue authority in Scientology during my tenure as Deputy Inspector General External in RTC. IA was just one area that I had. I would see these things, see the process. They would compile an issue, maybe based on 15, 20 other different disrelated things in order to make a point about a particular subject, and then would say L. Ron Hubbard wrote this, when in fact, in its original form you could never, it would never make the sense that it makes when they finish the compilation.

L: Did you ever see them take something that L. Ron Hubbard never wrote about, never said anything about and create their own opinion, own interpretation or policy directive? Let's just say, for example...

J: OT VIII.

L: He never did OT VIII?

J: He had something about OT VIII, and the original I never saw, but a person that did see the original..

L: Who was that?

J: Vaughn Young. It had no more writing on it than this. But, there was a lot of other little scraps of paper around. Again, it was a compilation process.

L: Somebody did this, not L. Ron Hubbard.

J: Oh yes, Ray Mithoff did this.

L: One has no way of knowing Mithoff took whatever notes that were there, if those notes were really related to OT VIII.

J: Or anything.

L: And yet the church issued OT VII as authored as L. Ron Hubbard from his old notes, this was his work. There was nothing that said, assembled by Bob Mithoff.

J: Ray Mithoff.

L: It didn't have anything like that.

J: It would have RM, it would have LRH/RM and whoever the typist was, just like the NOTs materials.

L: Did you ever see Scientology take -- like car washing, we know there is a policy on car washing -- but something like using an automatic teller, and all of a sudden a policy appears, authored by L. Ron Hubbard, on something that he never wrote anything on?

J: Like how to do laundry. There was just an insanity about L. Ron Hubbard's laundry. These smells, these smells make him crazy. There was a point where he would have his laundry come to the basin, they would wash up a bunch of stuff, and send it back out to him. He would be complaining about the soap, the scratching on the skin, the smell. So, a whole big research project was done to get un-scented washing soap. No one in the Sea Org can wear anything with a scent. They still practice this today even though that stupid son of a bitch is long dead. Then me, being a smoking person, I end up being up being the last person on the line to have to smell his stuff. He never complained once I started that. I brought in an issue authority. It used to be in that special unit.

L: The research that was done on soaps and cleaning and detergent was written up as a policy, with his name on it, and he never did the research, never wrote a line of it, and it was copyrighted under his name.

J: How to wash shirts and stuff, I mean tubs, big tubs were bought. You would literally take a brand new shirt and it would be in tatters by the time you were done, washing the smell out of them, washing the sizing out of them.

L: We take a little tangent, there's reasons for this, I will connect it up as we go through. You will logically get where some of these things are going. Some of this stuff relates to our court case right here. They claim that everything, every line, every word, in every policy that bears the name of L. Ron Hubbard was written by L. Ron Hubbard.

J: That's just a flat out lie.

L: They're using that for their copyrights, that all of it belongs to L. Ron Hubbard and the L. Ron Hubbard estate, and they're trying to enforce that with the judge. Let's go back to Mary Anne Fouser.

J: Now, what was happening is that there was this franticness to get this TRO against the AAC. They were having some party that weekend. Just prior to that, we were infiltrating them and doing these little operations. Gary Clinger actually showed up with the Jewish yarmulke on, and all of these plants were there. We wrote this up and planned it, executed it. It just made their event a nightmare. They ended up calling the police because we had secretly rented the place above the AAC and were bugging it. We knew

what they were saying, all the plans, everything. So, there is an operative upstairs, there is one, Bob Mithoff, that's in and out of there, doing everything, plus there were other females involved. They just never had a chance. We were in such a panic about, on yeah, and then they got an injunction, once they discovered these things, they got an injunction against the church for the harassment and being on the property and coming around. They actually got the first injunction, which the only cover we had at that point was Bob Mithoff in there. So, of, this just caused a panic, now these sons of a bitches got something against the church, and we quickly have to do this thing and move on this RICO thing because it was looking bad. We were already in suit with them and we were doing all these harass productions. It was the weekend.

L: One thing, is it your understanding that to record someone without their permission is a crime in most states.

J: Yeah.

L: Did they know that this was a crime to bug people's homes and record their private conversations without their permission?

J: Sure. That's not the first time and that's the difference I can talk to you about other things. I'll give you something real rude. There was a staff member, Bill Finell, kind of strange, the guy just acted kind of strange, people thought he was strange, he had wife, Holly Fennell, she worked at RTRC. There was a concern that they were going to blow this that and the other thing. Rick Aznaran went got a bugging device, a lamp, we had them moved, Vicky had them moved from they were living to another place where we bought a lamp with a bug in it, so that we could get some insight on staff members.

L: You bugged your own staff members?

J: Rick and I are sitting out in a field with headphones on, while this guy and his wife were having sex, doing whatever they're doing. It was horrible. They'd go to sleep. This would go on night after night, after night. It's beyond...

L: Would you think that tactic had been used on other staff members who they thought might be blowing things, this is not a rare exception?

J: No.

L: The illegal wiretapping of their own ministers, they are ministers, staff members, because staff members are now ministers, I believe?

J: Oh yeah, they had to be, some kind of crazy thing came up in the 80's.

L: So, they are bugging their own ministers without their permission?

J: Yeah, using high tech spy equipment, radio receivers, radio transmitters, bugging devices.

L: Go on with...

J: OK, it was Friday, too late to get in a motion with the judge. The whole weekend is going to pass and they're having a party, and through intelligence it was discovered that Mayo was going to give these packs to certain people to start these groups. Robin Scott was one of them, over in England, Maura [?] Steve Bell Maine [?] in Scotland and England, and there was some people in Copenhagen, I don't remember their names. The church was in a panic about that because they had done their ODC so very well, they were sending staff members like Lynn Farney and other OSA people to her house to bring her this motion to try to get it. Which was not successful, because something happened, security got pissed off at them, and they didn't get her to just grant an immediate TRO and we ended up having to go to court on it, she granted it at that time.

L: Did she disclose that you had come to her house privately? Did she disclose that?

J: No, there was never any mention of that.

L: Was there a lawyer with Lynn Farney when they went to approach the judge privately? Do you have any recollection?

J: No. I don't think that there was. I don't think that there was.

L: So, Farney himself went to the judge's home?

J: Right, standing out there.

L: Did he have something for her to sign?

J: Yeah, he had the papers.

L: And some attorney in Scientology had prepared that?

J: Yes.

L: The security would not let Farney into the house. Continue on with the story.

J: The following Monday, or Tuesday, I don't remember which, is where the story co-joined with what I told you earlier, where we were in court and went to the judge's back chambers and got her and got the TRO that day. Later on an investigation was being done in relationship to that specific suit. At this time, when that investigation started, I was no longer in a high position; I'm basically lower than whale shit. It was explained to me, and I don't even remember the case, that the church was being accused of judge tampering. The FBI wanted to talk to me, specifically, of all damn people, who knew the

least, to go in and talk to them. I just basically went up and told them what I told you. I was told that some people went out there, and it was an unsuccessful thing, but beyond that I didn't know. But, in retrospect, if you look at the ODC that they do on the judge, on every judge that they get, and how they then send professionals in to talk to people that are close to them, to really test the waters, this is the way it works.

L: Are they sending in people like

J: Attorneys.

L: Are they sending people in close to leak out bits of the information that they've collected for the purpose of intimidating the judge?

J: No, first they will try to find out, how does the judge feel about Scientology. Let some friend of a friend of a friend find out. They're paying money, big money, for this information. They will do that and try to coerce any attorney, "Look, this is what we need, you've got an in, you want to make a little quick money, do this."

L: So, they find out how the judge feels, that's not illegal, that's just investigation. Where do you feel that, what else, did you hear something else that makes you think that they tampered with this judge.

J: No, I haven't heard anything else beyond that. I don't think that the judge herself, in all honestly, this is my opinion, was that way. I don't think she was that way. I think she made a decision based on the evidence. Here's stuff that Scientology says is theirs, even they acknowledge, yes, this was Mayo's state of mind. He didn't say, hey, I wrote these things. He didn't say that.

L: Still so brainwashed. He didn't say that, that's amazing.

J: So it was like, what was she supposed to do?

L: Did you ever hear anything that they in any way told her they had personal information about her through any source?

J: I know they knew who her husband was, and I knew they just knew everything about her.

L: OK. Let's talk about is there any other judge, or members of the court, that you know that Scientology may have tampered with, bribed, intimidated?

J: Charles O'Rielly. I think that they had him beat up one night in a club. This was done in conjunction with Gene, their PI.

L: Gene Ingram.

J: Gene Ingram. There was some club. This was during the trial, I guess it was your trial, as a matter of fact. They were in Los Angeles, and there was this club that Charles O'Rielly liked to go to. It was known that he liked to go there. They were just insane about this Charles O'Rielly. Specifically, I remember this, the day after Charles was beat up, no, I back it up. Marty Rathburn and Gene Ingram were heavily into following Charles from the time the courtroom was over. Wasn't it Breckenridge that was the judge?

L: No it wasn't Breckenridge, it was Swearinger.

J: Swearinger. They hated that judge and they hated Charles O'Rielly, because apparently.... I was not necessarily involved in that, because that was not anything that had anything to do with trademarks, and I was primarily concerned with trademarks in my executive position in the church.

L: What did you hear?

J: What I was hearing days prior to Charles actually getting beat up, and then days after, was, this like something between David Miscavige, Marty Rathburn and Gene Ingram. Because I was at ASI on other matters, I would hear some of this stuff. But Dave Miscavige made it very clear that this was on a need to know basis, what Gene Ingram and Marty were doing in relation to Charles O'Rielly going to this club that he liked to go to. Days prior to it they were talking, "yeah, he really runs his mouth somebody's going to beat him up. He's really loud and boisterous, he's such an asshole and we had so and so in there and so and so..."

L: So and so in the club?

J: Yeah, other investigators, other people watching him, tricking him, doing things to deceive him, like buying him a drink, talking to him. Then it seemed like there was a day when they said, we know where this guy's at, we know what we're going to do, in relation to Charles O'Rielly. He's going to get a big surprise. This is what I remember, specifically, and then...

L: Was David Miscavige saying this?

J: No, Marty saying it to David Miscavige and Gene Ingram was there, and I'm there and Vicky's there. Then Dave would just be elated about this, he'd be so happy, "OK, OK, OK." Then now, the next day, "Charlie got beat up, oh man it was so funny, if you could have seen see his face," Marty's telling this to me and Vicky, no it was me and Vicky was there, Dave Miscavige was there, Norman Starkey was there. They were just hooting and hollering and thinking this was the greatest thing that happened since sliced bread. Gene Ingram was there and he wouldn't speak when I was there, but Marty would kind of come and tell the story. Gene Ingram was kind of kept away from everybody. It is my belief that they orchestrated that confrontation that O'Rielly had.

L: Did Marty or anyone ever say that anything which directly lead you to believe that they were involved in getting Charlie beat up?

J: It seemed, like I said, in days prior, they were orchestrating something that would set something off like that. The details escape me. It was like a hard meeting every time, "OK, what did he do, where did he go? OK, this is what we're going to do, that is that we're going to do." They're planning it, so it seems like it was orchestrated for that to happen.

L: If you remember more details about that, let me know, if you remember any conversations, anything anybody specifically said...

J: They was like, why are you even saying this around Jesse? He was so happy, had to tell someone.

L: David Miscavige?

J: Yes.

L: Did he say, "Charlie got what he deserved", did he say "Charlie got a surprise"?

J: No, he would be just insanely laughing, happy.

L: Did you ever hear anything about Judge Swearingen's dog being drown? Nothing at all. He had a little collie that somebody climbed over the fence and drowned the dog in the pool.

J: Maybe Marty. But it's just faint. It may take me a day or a day or a half after we have this conversation to remember.

L: I'm going to throw some stuff out that you may have never heard. One of the biggest things that happens to people who stand up to Scientology is their pets start dying. Their animals disappear or die, it's been a pattern through the IRS investigators who were having problems with their pets, I've had problems with pets. Other people who have stood up to Scientology. Do you have any knowledge about anyone ever talking about hurting an animal because it's not a felony and it sends a signal, it's close to the family, and it really sends a terror signal.

J: Nothing like that, not in those terms, but I remember being in an ASI boardroom -- and again this is something that will come to me more strongly later -- where Marty was talking the Godfather movie when the horse head appeared. He was alluding to doing this to other people that were critics of Scientology, scaring people by doing it. I do remember.

L: Do you remember any more specifics about what he said?

J: I remember, this is what I remember. David Miscavige was there, Norm was there, I was there, Vicky was there, Marty was there, some other, maybe somebody from OSA, I'm trying to think who it would have been. Maybe Edith Buchele, and Klaus Buchele used to be over the OSA network. I remember at a break period, Marty bringing it up. I think one of the attorneys was there, I don't know if it was John Peterson. It could have been Joe, I doubt it.

L: Joe Yanny?

J: Yeah, because Joe used to be an attorney for the church. Anyway, we were in that meeting and they were making a joke about how intense that scene was, and maybe perpetrating something similar to that on other people. I remember Dave saying, look, shut up, don't talk about that kind of stuff. That's what I remember right now, specifically about it. I may remember more about it later. That's what comes to mind now.

L: Do you recall any other instances involving another, you talked about Charlie, involving any lawyers, any judges, any clerks, sometimes to get a clerk to bury a document, change a document, change an evidence. Do you ever remember hearing anything about altering the court records or tampering with a judge, or intimidating a judge, or letting them know that they have blackmail on them.

J: I think they did something to try to intimidate Judge Breckenridge. I think they did. The way that I think it was done, and because I wasn't directly involved I can't tell you, "It happened Sunday at 12:15," that type of thing. What they did was influence, just like they do now. They go to your friends and family and say, well, it's not them that's doing it, they are paying people to do it, like have a lawyer go and say, "Hey, you are good friends with so and so, why don't you... Maybe this Breckenridge is getting a little bit out of hand." Try to get the judge's peers to say, "Hey look, you're out of line." This is what a program or operation that they had going for Breckenridge, to discredit him as a judge. I think they took articles out, they did quite a bit during that time.

L: They actually paid people to go to his friends and ask the friends or the associates of the judge to go to the judge and tell him he was out of line, with the way he was treating Scientology?

J: Right.

L: That's interesting, that is very interesting.

J: That's part of their policy, the ODC, they use that as a form of intimidation in and of itself. Like Lynn Farney would be a key one that would orchestrate that kind of shit, where they would just say he's slandering Scientology and try or dig up some dirt. Dig up crimes, he did this, he drinks, he runs around with whores, whatever.

L: Would they give that to the people that they were trying to influence, that they were trying to get to influence the judge? In other words would they say,

J: They would give that to friends, family associates, spread that kind of idea.

L: What they picked up in their investigation?

J: To back the judges off.

L: This is an important subtlety, because if they are gathering information about the judge's sex life, his business life, his credit, anything that would embarrass or discredit him, then giving it to his associates.

J: Let me finish. They would do ODC and CDC.

L: CDC is what?

J: Covert data collection.

L: Tell us about covert data collection.

J: Now ODC, you can go and get public records; CDC is going around and interviewing friends, associates, somehow getting a hold of bank records, somehow getting a hold of phone records.

L: When you say somehow, would they obtain these in a legal manner, to the best of your knowledge?

J: No. They would pay people to do it for them.

L: They would pay someone else.

J: Like a private investigator, if he said, "I can do this, I can get this."

L: I can get illegal bank records, illegal phone records. They would knowingly pay him, he would tell the church, "I can get these illegal records," and the church would pay them. The people that would pay them are the attorneys.

J: It would come through OSA, and the attorneys would pay the private investigators for investigation. It was like it was all legal, it looks all perfectly fine, but it would go from OSA to the attorneys they hired to the investigators, and that's how they get their information.

L: Would the investigators tell the attorneys that they could get these illegal bank records and phone records, or would they tell...

J: Let me lay it out for you, OK. This is how it would be done. They had certain investigators, it's like a network, Gene Ingram being the main one. He knows and works with all of these others. The thing would happen like this, "Hey Gene, it would be nice if we could get his bank records or his phone numbers to see who he's calling." Or whatever else.

L: Who would ask that?

J: Person in, well, this is how they mask and do this hypothetical situation. Like Lynn Farney, who's assigned to a case would say to an attorney, "Would it be helpful if we knew such and such about that judge, or another attorney, like if we knew, if we came up with information that says he hires prostitutes every other weekend or he's cheating on his wife, or whatever? Would that help us, or he's already prejudiced against Scientology and he's been saying whatever." Whatever kind of dirt they could dig up, an attorney would say, "Yeah, yeah, that would be helpful." Scientology would give a hypothetical situation to attorneys, "If we had this information, would it help our case move along?" "Yes." Of course, he knows what they're talking about. So then they go to a person like Gene Ingram and say, "Look, let's figure this out, we need to know this about this guy, where need to know where's he at, we need to know who he's calling, we need phone records, we need this kind of stuff."

L: They would actually tell Gene, "We need the phone records, the bank records."

J: Yep, right. And then to Gene, "Who can get it?" Well, Gene, "I know so and so and so, he can do it, he can do it, but it's gonna cost you." So Gene would set it up, have the act done. Then they would tell the attorneys, "We're going to get this information, we're hired this person who comes to your office and you pay them." They just basically shelling money through.

L: A couple of important questions: Who would generally tell Gene Ingram to go out and get phone records and bank records? What person?

J: Marty Rathburn, Lynn Farney, I'm talking about during my period of time. Lynn Farney would do it, and then there was a guy, Ben. Ben somebody from OSA. Ben Shaw?

L: Ben Shaw? OK. Did they know it was illegal to obtain bank and phone records.

J: No, see, of course. But it's part of their policy, ODC/CDC.

L: They're going to get whatever they can, but the important distinction, did they know..

J: I can't speak for everyone's mind. They knew it was illegal, but they knew how to do it so they would never get caught at it.

L: They knew it was illegal, they asked for illegal documents, they paid attorneys to break the law and obtain these illegal documents...

J: They didn't pay attorneys, the attorneys just shelled the money to the investigator.

L: So, they didn't pay the investigator, they didn't do it directly. The lawyers did.

J: The attorneys do.

L: Now, did the lawyers, this is an important distinction, did the lawyers know that Scientology was telling the attorneys, telling the investigators to go get bank records and phone records?

J: Of course.

L: They knew it. Name some of the attorneys that knew.

J: Earle Cooley knew what the deal was on everything. John Peterson, who is dead, knew everything. Moxon, as he was coming up and along, he kind of came up through Invest, he came up in that muck, in that filth.

L: He knew. How about...

J: OK, go ahead.

L: Heller, Larry Heller?

J: Larry Heller, big one, yes of course. Larry Heller, Sherman Lenske, his little brother.

L: Drescher?

J: That's not one that I'm familiar with.

L: How about the Yingling group? Monique Yingling?

J: I don't know, I'd have to see some stuff.

L: That's a new name. Any other Scientology attorneys that you knew who knew their private investigators were going out and getting illegal documents and they were paying them for them? The illegal documents, the phone records... Joe Yanny's OK, leave him off. Do you want to repeat that?

J: No, I'm never going to speak against Joe.

L: Joe's OK, I deal with him all the time, so does Margaret. We've been through all of this.

J: I don't want to say anything about him, without his permission.

L: Did these bank records, I've had my bank cracked three times.

J: It's not hard.

L: Three times, with codes on it. Somebody is paying money to get the bank records. They ain't getting it from a teller.

J: Do you want to open that can of worms? Get their lead counsel and all their sub-counsels and subpoena, I want to see how much money you're paying investigators. You will find that to be an inordinate amount of money that the attorneys themselves are paying.

L: How much do you think they pay for illegal bank records? What do you think, \$2,000, \$5,000? Any kind of a guestimate?

J: That was on a need to know basis. Everyone didn't have that information.

L: Question, when they would obtain, when the lawyers would get the investigators to go out and get the records...

J: You're not listening to me. Lawyers had nothing to do with it. The church would go directly to their lead investigators and say, this is....

L: So, they would go to the church, and not even the attorneys? The attorneys were paying blind?

J: Right.

L: Holy shit.

J: Yes. They were just told, we hired him, pay the money, boom. They were just used.

L: That's how they run the scams.

J: They were just used to pay to make it look legal.

L: They knew they were...

J: Attorneys don't even know what they have going on, and they don't want to know and they tell them. That would be good, how you get it is your business, don't tell me about it, but I'll pay some investigators and if you've got some information I can use, great.

L: So, they're paying the investigator to get the stuff any way they can, they know that the investigators are aren't obtaining it legally, but because they don't see the documents, they're just writing the checks, so it all has the apparancy of legality, at the attorney's office and it has the appearance because Scientology isn't paying for this illegal information, they're just getting it.

J: Yeah but Scientology is paying for it. It's coming from...

L: It's being laundered through the attorneys?

J: Right.

L: So, Scientology would get the bank records, the phone records, what other illegal records would they obtain that you know?

J: They'd get your criminal history, that's so damn easy to get, any kind of record.

L: Like a sealed court record, confidential record, criminal records, they'd get those?

J: What I'm saying is they would get, if they wanted to know your criminal history, they'd have it like that [Snaps fingers]. Now a normal person can't get that. It's not supposed to be available.

L: What about other parts of the covert data collection? What other things would they do, what other types of information would they accumulate?

J: Tax records, financial statements majorly, phone records.

L: Tax records, IRS 1040s, like your IRS records?

J: Yeah, they would know, they could get that. They could get whatever.

L: OK.

J: OK, let's take a break. I'm done with this today.

Tape 2, August 24, 1998

L: 2, 3, 4, 5, 6. Today is the 24th of August, a Monday. This is Lawrence Wollersheim. I'm with Jesse Prince. We're talking about his experiences with Scientology. Jesse, I just want to emphasize again what's important is that you just tell us just the facts, just the way they were, what you heard, what you saw, what you did, what other people did, names, as much of the dates as possible, as specific as possible, and occasionally I'll ask you questions about certain things, and we'll just go from there. What I had you read is a document called "Death, Psychosis and Scientology" which is fragments of a confidential

database about members of Scientology, who either died mysteriously, attempted or committed suicide, went psychotic, or abused some way inside Scientology. Because Scientology compartmentalizes all the bad news, only its intelligence department and a few people, so that other people don't know when things are going wrong and things are severe, the only way you can reconstruct this is to try to get everybody's little piece, like a puzzle and put it together. You would be amazed over the years, how many little pieces fit together that have given families and other people some understanding of what happened to their child, or what happened to their husband or wife. With that introduction, let's just go right into it. You made some yellow sticky notes. Just tell us what you know, you can read the point and just discuss anything that you remember.

J: The first thing that I'll speak on is [Reading] "Flo Barnett, a.k.a. Miller, who died from several gunshot wounds. She was David Miscavige's mother-in-law. Just before her death she was reported to have had an argument with David Miscavige and threatened to go public and sue Scientology." What I know about this, I guess happened right during the time of her death, no, actually, it was a little bit before because I was auditing Shelly Miscavige.

L: Shelly is one of his twin sisters?

J: Shelly Miscavige is David Miscavige's wife, or was during that time period, I assume she still is. I was doing auditing on her, and she brought up the fact that she had a black person in her family. She proceeded to tell me about this, that her father-in-law was black, and living with her mother. She told me that they seemed to get along very well, he was one person that understood her and took care of her. She said that some people said that he took her money. She mentioned to me that he just had a job fixing things, he would go out and fix things for people. He didn't have a regular like 9-5 job where he went out and reported to. As far as she could see, he took care of her mother very well. She was happy to have a black person in there. She mentioned that Dave Miscavige had met him and wasn't very approving of him, other family members kind of shunned the mother.

L: The mother is Flo Barnett?

J: Yes, because she was married to this black person. Then, Pooh, who I only know as Pooh and Sarge, which is Shelly's sister, who was one of the two couples that were with L. Ron Hubbard at the ranch shortly before and during, and all the time before and during and after his death, working as his personal maids, servant people. Then, I remember talking with her and speaking to David Miscavige after the woman had died. Whereby I had already known that David Miscavige didn't care for the father-in-law, but then Shelly told me – and she wasn't as talkative about it as she had talked to me about other things, because she would speak to me all the time – but she told me that her mother had committed suicide and had shot herself several times with a rifle. I just looked at her dead in the eye and said, "How in the hell can a person kill themselves and take a rifle and shoot themselves several times." She just looked at me and said, "I don't know, I really don't know how she died, but she had several gunshot wounds." She said that

Dave Miscavige was saying that the father-in-law did it. Well, she didn't believe the father-in-law did it, because they loved each other. She was quite upset about it. I couldn't get her to talk about. I was the person auditing her, so you know, we do all of these Scientology routines you know.

L: She wouldn't talk at all about it?

J: No, she was just kind of in a state of deep sadness. She cried quite a bit over it. It just didn't make sense that her mother shot herself more than one time with a damn rifle. And how that could even happen, she just wouldn't talk beyond that, beyond just is there an error, she'd break about it, is there a problem, is there a withhold about it, that kind of thing.

L: What about...

J: ...locating all of this stuff to alleviating it.

L: Did you hear anything between a conflict between David and the mother-in-law? Did you hear anything that would say this is true or not, the idea that she was getting auditing from David Mayo and David Miscavige was very upset about it? Did you hear anything like that?

J: Yes, yes, yes, now that you bring this up. You see, because during this time period is when we had Bob Mithoff in there as a plant, with David Mayo and it was known that Flo was messing around with these people, receiving stuff. Yes, it was. Yes, he was upset about that.

L: Do you have any knowledge of any kind of a covert action on Flo Barnett to get her back, or to get her to stop, or to just get her away from the daughter and get her completely disconnected from the daughter, his wife?

J: Yes, I do, I do know that was done. In the church, there were several different investigative areas, all run by a single source, Dave Miscavige. As you say, information is compartmentalized. I would just know so much, the next person would know so much, the next person would know something else.

L: Was David Miscavige technically what they call PTS because he had a mother-in-law, of his wife who was receiving squirrel auditing?

J: David Miscavige was taking direct action concerning that situation himself along with Marty Rathburn.

L: Marty Rathburn was involved?

J: Yes.

L: Do you have any actual knowledge of what they might have done if they did do anything to Flo Barnett?

J: What I know is when that situation came up with Flo Barnett, it was taken off all the normal investigative lines, and like how information would go back and forth, it was all isolated to ASI and Marty, and specifically what he was doing with PI's and stuff. It did not come up any more.

L: Do you believe that private investigators were involved in that, with Flo Barnett?

J: Absolutely. Yes, I do.

L: If there is anymore, let me know, if not, let's go on to the next one. Anything else?

J: I guess the only significant point about that one is that part of the investigation, when it came up that Flo, you see, because I do believe it came up as I recall this, it came up based on operations that people that were under me were doing.

L: So it was taken away from you and your covert operations.

J: Right, when her name came up as a person discovered in there, anything that had to do with Flo Barnett, we were no longer were allowed to cover. It was specifically taken over.

L: Let's go on to the next one.

J: Next one is #9, "John Colletto. SO Stat, became psychotic and suicidal while on OT III. Very shortly after he shot and killed his wife, Diane Colletto to death. This occurred in 1979, in front of ASHO in Los Angeles. Shortly afterward he killed him self. The GO made great efforts to keep the whole thing silent." Well, I've written a page about that already.

L: We've got that. What auditing was he on? Let me bring up why I ask you what auditing ethics actions RPF. Having being on the RPF yourself, you probably have gone to those points.

J: I was there with him when he came into the RPF.

L: He was on the RPF?

J: Oh, yes. I was dealing with him.

L: Did he go psychotic on the RPF?

J: This is how it happened. He came in visibly upset, very upset, and he was being physically moved from one place to another like he was surrounded by a group of people

from the GL that actually brought him up to the RPF. Andre received him as a bosun, I received him as a deputy bosun stewards and supplies, and the RPF MAA was either Harry Paneer or Dick Jones at the time. We would receive every person coming in. I recall when John Colletto came in, he was very upset. There was a rally form that people had to go on, and I actually personally spoke to him, just trying to find out what's going on. He told me he was upset because Scientology had ordered separation of him and his wife. They were saying that he was SP, and this guy was like, I could see him losing it, or had lost it. He was seriously stressed, seriously upset, seriously in disagreement, underneath the surface was a rage that was going to come out. You could just see it.

L: Was he physically restrained by the GO people?

J: Yes.

L: Was he physically restrained on the ship? Was he ever held from leaving?

J: We're not talking about the ship, this happened at the blue complex.

L: Oh, at the blue complex. Like he tried to leave and he was physically restrained?

J: Oh yes, by other RPF people.

L: Repeatedly?

J: Whenever he tried it. He literally wasn't let out of the building for a while. He was watched by 4 or 5 people until he. Then you could kind of see he cooled off a minute, and got white armband. He just played the game, looking in retrospect. He just played the game, and when he got that white armband and was allowed to go outside that was it, he was gone.

L: Was he under lock-down prior?

J: Yes.

L: He was locked down so that he could leave the premises on his own free will?

J: The way it was, was we were on the 7th floor of a complex in one wing. There was only two ways out of there, unless you go out the window. There was a person at each, you know, like the QMs at night, that would guard the door so that no one, not only him, but no one else would get out without notice.

L: Would you feel that he was held against his will?

J: Very much so. He did not want to be there.

L: Did you ever hear of him of having any kind of a... I don't know if you had access... The only time I'm going to ask you about PC folders is when it relates to criminal activity or people being physically harmed or mentally harmed. I'm not interested in what people did in the past life, and their sexual things, it's just not the issue. Where there may have been knowledge of the organization knowing that the person was having psychotic fits or threatening, and they did nothing besides lock him up against his will.

J: Well, this is a classic situation.

L: Did you know of anything that would make a reasonable person who was auditing him, or his CS, or ethics officer, believe this guy was threatening to commit a violent act and was borderline psychotic or psychotic?

J: Yes, he was all of that. When he came there he had already threatened to kill her, it was known. He had already said that before coming to the RPF, that was told to the RPF/MAA. I'm trying to think of the guy's name who told me, who said it from the GO.

L: So the GO had already known?

J: The GO brought him there, they had already known that he had made a death threat against his wife, they had already known, they had classified him as being psychotic.

L: So he was classified by the organization as psychotic?

J: Yes.

L: ..and held against his will in a locked building?

J: In a guarded building.

L: Was he receiving any auditing, was he on the confidential levels? Nothing about his case level, did you know what his case level was? Was he an OT III?

J: No, I didn't know anything. At that time I was nothing. I hadn't done any of those things, I didn't know anything about it.

L: Let's go on to the next thing.

J: You're going to put the rest of the story with this.

L: Yes.

J: "#10, Bob Schaffner was an OT III."

L: Actually, why don't you put it on the tape right now, about what you know of this guy who shot and killed his wife and Marty Rathburn being there, just a quick condensation.

J: I'll just condense it quickly. After he received his white armband, which means, in Scientology, that in a nutshell, they've influenced you enough so that you're not going to do anything outside of what they tell you to do. He was running around with his white armband and he was saying how great it was and how he was going to get redeemed. But, I could see it in his eyes that was not the case. I could see it in his eyes that he was extremely unsettled on this matter with his wife. It was within a day or two after receiving his white armband he was gone, gone, gone. Now in the RPF, John Colletto, blew, all went to hell, lower conditions for everyone because he blew. Specifically the RPF/MA, who I believe was Harry Paneer at the time. Some days passed. We were up on the 7th floor, I guess it was a study period, heard these gunshots. We all ran out to look, and there was a car, I believe it was a little white car, and a bunch of people circling around it. People were saying, "John Colletto!" We knew that he said he was going to kill his wife. Word came up, John Colletto had just murdered Diane Colletto, and ran off. Now the police and everyone was looking for him. Then the GO, the Guardians Office people came running upstairs to make us get away from the window so that we couldn't view the carnage below. Within a few days of that, or maybe a week, I was told by a person from the GO, I think it was Tom somebody, that John Colletto had been found dead of self-inflicted wounds from the same weapon that he used to kill his wife with, in the Hollywood Hills with a suicide note, blaming it on Scientology.

L: Blaming it on Scientology.

J: Yeah.

L: Did this ever reach the newspapers?

J: No, not that I know, but I'm incarcerated myself.

L: So you wouldn't know. OK, I'm going to ask a couple things. What was the cover story that they generated around this?

J: I have no clue.

L: Do you have any idea what they told Diane's parents?

J: No. I was in the RPF.

L: OK. Do you think, this is a tough question, do you think that the GO might have went out hunting for this guy?

J: I know for a fact they did. Police, everyone was looking for him.

L: Do you think the GO went out to find him using their own files, to try to track him down to where he might be?

J: You, that would be utterly my opinion, but yes, I do think so. Considering all the things the GO used to be doing, even down to LSD in the toothpaste, it was their priority to find him.

L: It was their priority, to find him before the police, or for the police.

J: Just find him.

L: You never heard anything about the GO being... The guy is found with a note that is incriminating Scientology, that they caused that. We'll just leave it that. Let's go on to the next one.

J: [Reading] "Bob Schaffner was an OT III and having problems. He rode a bike under a truck, dying instantly in 1987 or 1988." I heard about this incident, but I remember Bobby Schaffner from before, which I also did in the write-up. Bobby and Cindy Schaffner, they were constantly harassed about their relationship in that they wanted to have children, and children were really frowned upon and looked down upon. Bobby Schaffner was the kind of guy that did the electrical kind of stuff, kind of a good all around guy. I remember specifically, we were on this schedule where we had to work for 30 hours, and only sleep for 3 hours.

L: So you worked for 30 hours, and slept for 3. How long did this go on?

J: Couple weeks.

L: A couple weeks, 30 hours on, 3 hours off.

J: People were literally falling over.

L: Schaffner was on this schedule.

J: Yes. He ended up cutting one of his fingers off. He went to the hospital. He was so glad to go to the hospital. I remember asking him why, he said, "because I got a chance to sleep. I didn't even feel it, I was so out of my mind when it happened, because in the schedule I didn't know what was going on. I got a chance to sleep and woke up and found my finger gone."

L: Why were they working him like this?

J: All of us, 125 people were being worked like this.

L: All on the RPF at this time?

J: Yes.

L: So he was worked to the point, 30 hours on, 3 hours off, that he then cut his finger off accidentally?

J: Right. People are operating major heavy equipment. He went to sleep. Then I remember it came up as an issue. They got married, I believe on the RPF, and it came up as an issue, they were like once a week, they would get a chance to be together as a couple, and have sex. They had done this, and now Cindy Schaffner was pregnant. She was being talked to quite a bit about how being pregnant is a bad thing, you shouldn't have kids. I know Bobby was very much crazy over that point. I think he may have been Jewish or something, I'm not sure. I think he may have been. He had deep kind of family morals. His concept of family went beyond what was being forced on him by Scientology. He had a stronger connection. He spoke to me about how important it was to have kids and stuff like that. Then they didn't want him to have kids, and he was constantly in ethics. It was like, you'd just see him with his head in his hands all the time.

L: Were their penalties if you had kids?

J: Yep.

L: What kind of penalties.

J: Lower conditions, constant lower conditions.

L: If you got pregnant and had kids you would have to work off a lower conditions and do extra work and everything else?

J: Right.

L: Were they trying to convince his wife to...

J: ...to have abortion, yes.

L: Were they being forceful about trying to?

J: Yeah, screaming at them, and "why are you so selfish to have a child."

L: Did she eventually have an abortion?

J: I don't recall because, shortly after that experience, all the work was done in the complex, so they started feeding the people back into the organizations. You see, during this time, everyone was making like \$4.30 a week. But after everything was completed in the complex, they sent the mission in to start putting people back into the organizations. He was from Asho, and they sent him back to Asho. I had seen him briefly afterwards, and I do believe him and Cindy had a child together.

L: So he got off the RPF and this thing about the accident, of what happened to him, this was after he was back at Asho?

J: Right.

L: Do you know anything about how it happened?

J: No, I don't. I remember talking to Bobby Schaffner after we had both been out, because I was the person now, who took the majority of the people who had been in the RPF to make sure that they continued their co-auditing. They set up this board called the co-auditor, and I was in there as a technical person. I would see him and I would say, "How's it going?" He would tell me being at Asho was just like being in RPF, same schedule, not sleeping, not eating, screaming at people, people screaming at him all the time. Made to feel bad that he had even been on the RPF. He just said that he wasn't all that happy.

L: You think he was working such hours that his judgment could have been impaired because of lack of sleep?

J: ...and food, and nutrition.

L: Lack of sleep and lack food.

J: Yeah.

L: Let's go on to the next one.

J: OK. Phoebe Moro. I have very little to add about Phoebe Moro beyond that I was there when she passed. I don't know what happened to her, or what her situation was, but I know she was being audited up until the day she died, and they were doing this let the body go kind of thing with her, just like die.

L: Auditing to help her die.

J: Right.

L: Did she have cancer, was she terminally ill?

J: She was terminally ill?

L: Do they sell auditing to people who are terminally ill with the hope of cure?

J: They're not supposed to, but I've seen it time and time again.

L: Tell me what you saw.

J: When I was at Flag, as a cramming officer, you would often get people coming in that were terminally ill, but of course, they could petition to get well. There was this guy, his name was Skip somebody. He had a disk removed from his back, he could barely walk. I ended up auditing him for a while. He was always in so much pain, that let alone auditing, just sitting a chair was just a nightmare. Yeah, you had these kind of people on there. There were ones with cancer, I heard, why it would be beyond me to say the name of this one, the name of that one.

L: Do you remember the names of anyone that you knew that were terminally that were being sold auditing while they were terminally ill to help them cure their illness, like even subtle, any kind of method of giving a person who is in a desperate situation false hope to get them to buy a bunch of auditing, let me know.

J: That's all I know about that. [Reading] "John Peterson, formerly one of Scientology's leading attorneys." What I know about John Peterson is, he was the kind of attorney that Scientology really used as much as they possibly could, and then they made fun of him. I believe he was gay. They hired him and they would use him to pay for investigations that he knew very little of. In other words, people like Marty Rathburn, Gary Clinger, and other people that had much experience in dealing with private investigators and calling the ops, having them do things, this was... John Peterson was like the guy that all the money went through. That's majorly what he was used for. At a lot of the major meetings, I guess he was satisfying his conscience of trying to have some idea of the magnitude of things that were being done in his name, with the amount of money that was being funneled through him to pay private investigators to do these ops. To pay Bob Mithoff, everyone was paid.

L: Do you have any idea how much these people were paid? Any round estimates for different operations or different projects?

J: \$15,000, \$20,000 to Bob Mithoff.

L: For how long a time?

J: A month, a month and a half

L: For a month and a half to infiltrate a rival church, to destroy...

J: Steal records...

L: steal records...

J: provide mis-information.

L: Did he help bug the place?

J: No, but I know he broke in. He got it where they had their secret materials locked up, he actually broke in there and stole their materials. Planting mis-information within the group, and being generally secretively disruptive.

L: Was David Mayo's group considered a competitor religious group?

J: Yes, only in the field of OT levels major.

L: Was there any one inside the church of Scientology who you know who said, "we need to destroy this religious group that David Mayo is running?"

J: Sure.

L: Who?

J: David Miscavige.

L: They literally said, "we need to destroy the AAC?"

J: Right. Vicky Aznaran. I myself said we need to get rid of him.

L: Was there any discussion about what you would do to destroy this rival religious group?

J: Yes. There were mention of just running it into financial ruin by just running operatives, covert operations, suing, endless litigation to bankrupt them.

L: Did anyone ever actually say, that you remember who and what, that we want to plant electronic eavesdropping equipment in this organization?

J: Yes.

L: Who said that?

J: I'm not sure who said it, but I know who did it.

L: Who did it?

J: Gary Clinger.

L: Gary Clinger.

J: Right. He rented an apartment above the ACC and used sound listening devices to hear what was going on downstairs.

L: So, Gary Clinger was a part of the church of Scientology?

J: In the Religious Technology Center, one person that was directly underneath me in doing investigations.

L: He was in intelligence?

J: He was an intelligence case officer.

L: Did David Miscavige see information regarding illegal surveillance?

J: On a daily basis.

L: So he was reviewing this, knew this was illegal?

J: I was the person who would actually get the reports written from the case officers. It was my job to take the case officer reports from RTC to ASI for Lyman, Marty, Dave Miscavige.

L: So all three of them were getting those reports?

J: Yes.

L: And they had knowledge of the illegal activities going on?

J: Yes. I would get intelligence reports from the OSA network of some of their operatives, not all.

L: So you had numerous operatives from different operatives.

J: Numerous case officers from different operations reporting daily.

L: Is it reasonable to say that OSA had a few of their people in there, you had one of your people. I've been told by another operative who came out of OSA that they always run on threes. Usually three operatives who don't know on each other, so they have plausible, deniability and if they lose one they've got the others who can be used as back-ups and also verification that one isn't lying to them.

J: Totally correct. I would get reports from one incident from three different viewpoints, and they would never state who the agent was, and they would report it pretty much like the news. Sources say blah, blah... They would say eyes only. When you read the report you just automatically shredded it, so that there was never a compilation of intelligence reports. The rule, shred them.

L: You shredded a lot of reports?

J: Every day.

L: Did you ever receive a report that they had planted false documents inside of this religious competitor, David Mayo's group? That Bob Mithoff had planted, or someone had planted false documents inside the organization?

J: That part I honestly don't recall. I do know that Bob Mithoff stole financial records and turned them over to the church.

L: Stole the financial records?

J: Stole or copied them and sent them.

L: Of this competitive religious..

J: Because we know how much money they were making every week and we knew who they were auditing. Also we were doing ops on the people who were going to the AAC, to discourage them from going..

L: You were doing covert operations on the members of this faith, this religious splinter group, breakoff group, to convince them not to go into this organization.

J: Right, we would generally harass or threaten them.

L: Harass or threaten. Can you be more specific on how you would harass or threaten or try to convince them to stay away?

J: Multiple phone calls, following, we had a private investigator to follow them around.

L: Was it obvious following to intimidate?

J: Yes.

L: It was done deliberately just to intimidate the person.

J: Yeah, I remember, this one time where we actually got David Mayo on TV. He thought he was doing a television program, this is something Gene Ingram arranged. He was sitting there, they had the lights, camera and all this stuff, they just made him look like a complete fool. There was never any TV, there was never anyone interested in what he was doing. He surely thought it was. That was a common operation, as I'm recalling here. To send someone as a concerned reporter from some newspaper who is going to help you expose their terrible things that Scientology is using, even just how bad you're trying. When, in fact this is simply a private investigator.

L: Trying to get how much you will dump. So they did this to Mayo. Do you remember any specifics..

J: Bent Corydon, too.

L: Bent Corydon. Do you know any specifics of any of the members of this new religious group?

J: Flo Barnett.

L: Flo Barnett was harassed, covert operations were done on her.

J: That was taken outside of the scope and view of anything that I could see. Once it came up that she was on lines, it came up from the sources that were doing operations for the Religious Technology Center that she was the person who came on lines. At that point that information was turned over to David Miscavige, her ASI. At which point we no longer had anything to do with the Flo Barnett situation.

L: Do you think, in your experience of running covert operations, was there ever another time another covert operation was taken away from your area, besides Flo Barnett? This could be because maybe they thought it was too hot to handle.

J: Let me write that question down.

L: Was there any other covert operations that you were involved in were removed from you during the period of your handling them? I guess what I'm curious about is did they remove Flo Barnett from you as a matter, of some security situation or risk situation so high, was it a risk situation or was it an embarrassment situation? By asking this if it ever happened to you before, if you can remember, with this type of risk they would always take it away from me, that would tend to indicate there were risk situations that were removed from you. But if you're never had anything ever taken away from you, ever, and all of a sudden they take Flo Barnett away...

J: That was the first time I recall, because it was personal to David Miscavige, and he took interest in it and that was it.

L: Did the church consider that David Miscavige was trying to produce a reformed or better Scientology, not Miscavige, but David Mayo. Did he claim that he was doing it the right way, the best way, that he was reforming the delivery of the technical services? Did he ever make these claims that were known about inside Scientology?

J: I think that David Mayo's claim was that he wrote, or was the author of the NOTs materials anyway. He could do it better than anyone in the church because he was the guy that wrote it.

L: He invented it.

J: Not invented it, but wrote it, and very well did invent a lot of the things that he wrote about anyway. Just based on what he told me, he would sit there with L. Ron Hubbard,

and L. Ron Hubbard would have an idea, and then Dave would have an idea, say what it was, and they'd say, "Yeah, this is good, write it up." That's the way the NOTs series got written. I think it was 1-48 that came out like that. I think during my time it went up to 53. I think finally you start seeing Mithoff on the end, writing his own stuff, getting himself established as a technical source after David Mayo left. Then also, they went through and revised some of those things to make it seem like what David Mayo was bad or wrong. For the most part they pretty much stayed the same.

L: Do you thin..

J: To answer your question, his biggest thing was, "Hey, I wrote these materials."

L: Do you think they revised his stuff, not because it was really anything wrong it, but it was part of a discrediting program.

J: Total discrediting program.

L: What makes you believe that?

J: Because Ray Mithoff got into a campaign saying that he had seen some original advices and then seen some issues and made a point of pointing how certain things deviated from, and I do believe there's even an issue that came out right around 1983 discrediting David Mayo as a criminal in his compilation of these NOTs materials, in the NOTs issues themselves.

L: Do you believe that was more of a public relations, black PR attack, or do you believe that there really was a legitimate reason?

J: There was an issue that came out to the Scientology International ED written by Ray Mithoff at the time. Yeah, it was total PR just to discredit him.

L: Let's go on to the next person on the list.

J: We were talking about John Peterson, we didn't even finish with him. What happened when John Peterson got ill. They were enforcing auditing on him.

L: What do you mean by enforcing auditing?

J: Just really making him feel bad for not getting it. If you represent us, then you have to believe in what we say, and you have to get auditing, it can only help. There was this program where David Miscavige figured attorneys now need to start getting auditing.

L: So there was an active program to get these attorneys into audit.

J: Joe Yanny, John Peterson, Earl Cooley, went into auditing.

L: Who else, Thresher, Heller?

J: Heller went into auditing.

L: These guys are getting auditing.

J: They started out with life repair. First word clearing, life repair. Joe was really having a hard time with his auditing, Joe Yanny.

L: He's an alcoholic.

J: Joe Yanny?

L: Yes.

J: I didn't realize that. He was just chasing women, severely. He was just married to a woman named Dora and it was a mess. John Peterson, and they were all getting this over at the Celebrity Center, and they were required to do this. John Peterson...

L: They were literally ordered, or it was suggested?

J: Suggested.

L: Their business relationship would be greatly benefited if they started receiving the religious services of Scientology?

J: Exactly. John Peterson had been getting them for a while.

L: Did they have to pay for it, or was it given to them?

J: It was given to them.

L: Free auditing.

J: Yeah, at the Celebrity Center.

L: Before you go on, an important question. Were there any sec-checking type actions?

J: Yes.

L: Do you think that David Miscavige was looking for material that he could use to leverage the attorneys and control them?

J: Yes.

L: Why do you believe that?

J: Because that's what they do with everyone. The better you can control someone, I guess the better results you're going to get with whatever you're going to do. It was a definite effort to get these attorneys into Scientologists.

L: Is free auditing a normal practice?

J: Not at all.

L: Where have you seen people get free auditing before?

J: Celebrities.

L: Celebrities get free auditing. Like who?

J: Priscilla Presley, John Travolta, Tom Cruise, Chick Corea, Stanley Clarke, Kirstie Alley.

L: They're given free auditing. How much free auditing?

J: Enough to get them back on lines, enough to get them voluntarily coming to an organization, asking for another service.

L: The church promises them free auditing to get them back.

J: Doesn't promise, just gives it to them. It's called the Celeb Project. I ran it for quite a while.

L: How much value to free auditing do you think was given to Scientology's top celebrities, in cash value? Just a guesstimate.

J: Many tens of thousands of dollars worth to John Travolta, maybe over \$100,000.

L: So, John Travolta it would be safe to say has been paid for his endorsement of Scientology, he's received free services. Tom Cruise has been paid for an endorsement of Scientology, free services.

J: Yes. Nicole Kidman.

L: Nicole Kidman, free services.

J: She obviously didn't want anything to do with it. She's so done with it, publicly said that she had nothing to do with Scientology.

L: Nicole Kidman won't have any more auditing.

J: Right, and said she's not a Scientologist and wants nothing to do with it.

L: How can Tom Cruise still stay with her if she wants nothing to do with Scientology?

J: He's pretty backed off with Scientology himself at this point in time.

L: He is. Because of his wife?

J: I can only imagine. I can only surmise.

L: How recent is that information?

J: Spanky told me about this when I was out in LA with Dan Leipold in July.

L: Who else received free services from Scientology? Kirstie Alley, can you estimate about how much free services? You headed up the project, the Celebrity Recovery Project.

J: Yes. I know the people who received the most were John Travolta, Priscilla Presley, Lisa Presley, probably Chick Corea, next in line.

L: Kirstie Alley?

J: Very little. Kirstie was strange. But she did receive some. She had the Narconon program.

L: She has a coke addiction, she had a coke addiction. Let me ask you another interesting question. They receive these free services. No other Scientologists get free services that you know of?

J: The attorneys.

L: The attorneys. You kind of shocked me. I was in Scientology for 11 years, and everybody paid unless you signed a billion-year contract, or a three-year contract. I didn't even see anything given away.

J: If you were important, you could get it for free.

L: If you were important, you could get it for free.

J: Earl Cooley was, "I ain't payin' for a damn thing, you all want to audit me, ok, but I ain't payin'." It came to a point to where they were saying, "You need to start paying for all auditing", that's where all auditing stopped. To hell with this auditing. I know he gave quite a bit of auditing. John Peterson was getting auditing and then he stopped and said he did not want it anymore, he just wouldn't go to the auditing anymore. Now at this

point, John Peterson is pretty tied up in the thick of it, because he's paying everybody's bills.

L: Does he know what's going on with these illegal actions to get bank records.

J: Yes. He knows.

L: He does know?

J: Yeah, he knows.

L: To steal bank records, to steal phone records, IRS tax returns, to steal, what else would they steal?

J: Employment information?

L: Medical records. They would steal them from a hospital on a person.

J: Get them in a deceptive matter.

L: Get them in a deceptive matter, you mean impersonate someone to get the records. With me, several months ago, someone called up impersonating me to try to have my bank records sent to Florida. They called up our executive director's bank and said they her husband and wanted the bank records, that type of thing. What makes you think that John Peterson was being a front for Scientology's illegal activities?

J: Because he would sit and laugh about it. Like, "You guys are really getting me into some shit, and I'm worried." I've seen him say this to Marty Rathburn.

L: Was David Miscavige ever in the room?

J: Yes, David Miscavige would say something like, "If the heat is too hot, get out of the kitchen. If you can't stand the heat get out of the kitchen."

L: That's what he'd tell him. Marty Rathburn was there, Lyman Spurlock? You were all discussing these illegal activities with the attorney, and the attorney knew they were illegal...

J: Sure.

L: ...and the amounts of money?

J: John Peterson was a major major one, that the money would get funneled through.

L: Give us an idea of how much money might have gone through Peterson?

J: Hundreds of thousands.

L: Hundreds of thousands for illegal actions of obtaining illegal records.

J: that would be able to pay deep cover operatives.

L: Deep cover operatives.

J: Illegal soliciting of private information, surveillance.

L: Would this be on judges, too.

J: Oh, sure, anyone.

L: Did you hear the names of any judges that they were collecting these records on, specifically, the names of...

J: Breckenridge.

L: Breckenridge of the LA Superior Court, they obtained his illegal records. Who else?

J: Yeah. The other one, who was the other one? The other judge that was involved in your case? Swearinger.

L: LA Superior Court Judge Ronald Swearinger, they obtained all his...

J: As much as they could.

L: Any other judges that you ever heard?

J: There was another one that was kind of bad, that they didn't like.

L: Judge Ritchie, did you ever hear his name?

J: Yes, I've heard Marty say that name.

L: Krenzman out of Florida, Judge Krenzman.

J: There's another LA one that I'm thinking of.

L: Judge Margolis?

J: Yes, I've heard that name too.

L: Was that in association with the project to obtain judge's records.

J: It was any judge that was consistently giving them bad decision.

L: It would be safe to say that any judge who is ruling against Scientology, and what period to you think this was?

J: The biggest op to doing the judges who was giving bad decisions about Scientology was to get peer pressure put on them.

L: By giving the peers the information through..

J: From a friend of a friend, or hey, somebody said...

L: Through the operation of collecting covert operations and illegal records.

J: Right. With Breckenridge I remember specifically Marty spouting off like

[TAPE SIDE ENDS]

L: Starting again with side two, you were talking about Judge Breckenridge and Marty Rathburn talking about.

J: I remember Marty Rathburn actually saying something to trying to get some women in on Breckenridge.

L: To set him up with prostitutes?

J: Yes.

L: Do you know if that covert operation was actually done?

J: No, I do not.

L: Let me go back, we'll come. These are the tangents. It may look like we're going in tangents, there is a direction, I see something appearing here, a fabric.

J: John Peterson is getting paler, and paler, and he's getting skinnier, he's just in bad health. I remember going to see him, and he was just not well. Then, he was talking to someone, I think Marty was really harassing him about his auditing, and how they had just had an argument about it. I think that he died that day.

L: He died that day. They were harassing him to get more auditing. Do you know what kind of auditing he was getting at the time?

J: Life repair.

L: Life repair, isn't there some OW Repair, life repair. People telling things they're very ashamed of, it deliberately goes into embarrassing situations in a person's life.

J: Yes, yes. Cause it had already happened to Joe, and Joe was livid about it.

L: When he was livid?

J: Being sec-checked, and then somebody threatening to tell his wife Dora what the hell he's doing with his girlfriend, the secretary in the office.

L: So, this actually happened that they coerced him to get this auditing, got him to confess that he was being unfaithful to his wife, and then threatened while he was still a lawyer for Scientology, I mean he's still working for them and they're threatening him that they'll tell his wife about his affairs...

J: If he doesn't straighten up, stop having affairs and be more amenable to what he's being told to do.

L: Be specific. What was he being told to do?

J: He was supposed to be the lead counsel for Religious Technology. That meant that he had to devote every ounce of his time to Scientology, as opposed to having multiple clients.

L: Was he asked to do anything illegal, immoral, or that he didn't want to do? Do you know of him being asked to do anything?

J: No, I can't say that.

L: I heard from another operative, and we don't know if this was true, that he was asked to obtain illegal medical records on Charlie O'Rielly, to discredit Charlie O'Rielly, saying he was in a mental hospital or a drug rehab program, to discredit him.

J: He could have been asked to do that.

L: You have no knowledge.

J: That would be something that Marty would have pulled him to the side and spoken to him.

L: Is Marty the person who generally... Who runs most of the dirtiest operations?

J: Marty.

L: Marty Rathburn is the guy, and then he passes the data on to...

J: He has little clones, like Lynn Farney is just one of them. He was like the guy doing the dirtiest work. And Ben Shaw. He and Ben Shaw were doing the dirtiest work.

L: Besides Lynn Farney, Ben Shaw....

J: Gary Clinger.

L: Gary Clinger, Marty Rathburn, who else is most involved in the criminal side of Scientology?

J: David Miscavige?

L. David Miscavige.

J. Lyman Spurlock on the corporate level. He is so dirty.

L. When you say corporately, he's dirty, specifically what does he do that's illegal?

J: Tax, and how corporate's set up, undated resignations before you start. Just the shit thing, like the corporate integrity, hiding that. He is the one who has done that all along.

L: Scientology swears that they stopped undated letters of resignation at the time of the GO, at the time of Mary Sue Hubbard being kicked out, that was the old bad guys were doing that.

J: No, I did it in '82. It was conditional to being on the board. It was we're not supposed to do this, we say we don't do it, but you have to do it.

L: Who told you that?

J: Lyman Spurlock and David Miscavige.

L: They were in the room telling you to sign an undated resignation, that it's illegal, you're not supposed to do it, but you have to do it anyway. That was in 1982.

J: In case you flip out. It's our insurance policy.

L: Did you ever sign another one?

J: I may have.

L: How were you removed from the board of RTC?

J: Some guys just came in and told me I wasn't in any more. They already had the undated signed...

L: They showed you your signed letter of resignation.

J: Yep, you don't have to do anything. I ended up signing up something else anyway.

L: Did they have a board meeting in which you were present and they voted you off the board, which is normal.

J: No, none of that.

L: You had no right to express your views or protest.

J: None, whatsoever.

L: You were just.

J: Summarily told you signed, it, you're out, here's a mission, there's more of us than you, see ya.

L: What year did you sign it? '82?

J: Um-huh.

L: What year were you removed?

J: '87.

L: Five years later somebody walks in the room and says, "You're no longer a member of the board without any legal redress according to the laws of California, and of the functional way that a corporation must be run by the rule of law"?

J: That was a big joke.

L: Do you know of any other people who have signed?

J: Vicky Aznaran, Warren McShane.

L: Warren McShane The current head of RTC has signed an undated letter of resignation?

J: Jim Mooney, who was one of the trustees of CSI.

L: Jim Mooney, trustees of CSI.

J: Everyone signed undated resignation letters of resignation.

L: So you're saying Warren McShane, the guy who's in court testifying against FACTNet, is not really a legitimate director of RTC because he has committed a fraud becoming a director, and he's a director under fraud?

J: Right. Well, he signed an undated resignation. Which means, that just like I was told when I signed me, if you get flaky you're out of here, it's an insurance policy.

L: What other corporations that are run by the church of Scientology is this a practice in, to the best of your knowledge?

J: Everyone.

L: Everyone?

J: Every single one of church of Scientology. Everyone that I know who was on the board signed undated resignations. David Miscavige even told me that Mark Yeager signed one.

L: Mary Yeager signed one? Do you think Marty Rathburn and David Spurlock have signed undated.

J: Yes, I think, I haven't seen. But I know it was a standard practice, everyone was required to.

L: Every..

J: Every board member is required to sign undated resignations.

L: Let's keep talking. Anything about Peterson. The day he died he had an argument, was it a heated argument? Was it an intense argument?

J: I was there, but you know insistent Scientologists can behave, "You really need to do this". I know Marty was really on John Peterson.

L: Would it be fair to say they were trying to force him into auditing?

J: Yes it would be fair

L: Would it be fair to say that.

J: He had refused, and that was it. A week had gone by.

L: He died after this argument which he refused.

J: Less than 24 hours, had a heart attack. They laughed about it, they thought it was the biggest funny thing.

L: Who laughed?

J: David Miscavige, Lyman Spurlock, Norman Starkey, Marty Rathburn, because he was telling us, Vicky was laughing about it. He said, the damn fag had a heart attack, he should have got his auditing.

L: So you're saying that the man that they used for years to funnel money to commit illegal acts, and had been loyal to them, as their attorney, died, and in that room after he had died there was laughter.

J: At home.

L: At his home they were laughing?

J: No, he died at his home. Later in the conference room where we were at all the services, Mark Yaegar.

L: And they're actually laughing about this man who had loyally worked for them, he put himself in legal jeopardy, sold out his sole basically, as an attorney, and now they're laughing about his death.

J: Right. I need a break.

[BREAK]

J: OK, after everyone laughed heartily about John Peterson dying, old fag dying, then the next point of discussion was making sure that beautiful, beautiful flowers were bought for his funeral, spare no expense. He had beautiful little passages from each organization, like submitted by RTC, "John, we miss you, thank you for all your help." There was a magnificent show, that at that time, and I'm not talking as I sit here right now, but at that time, I felt like I was part of a Mafia organization. The callousness, and then the adherence, like the beauty and the ugliness just meshed together. At that time when I sat there, I used to wear \$500 suits, get them made by a tailor, all this kind of stuff. Then it was like that false sense of power, extreme false sense of power over life and death.

L: Let me ask you about two other areas. First is, celebrities. Did they receive, were they allowed to come to special Scientology centers for no charge and stay in special rooms or suites for lodging. Were they allowed to use the Scientology service facilities around the world without charge?

J: Certain celebrities pretty much had carte blanche in the best Scientology facilities.

L: Name a few names

J: I'll give specific examples. John Travolta would actually have auditors sent to his home to audit him for free. Rick Sheehee was one of them, Chris Sillcock was another one. Just flown all over at Scientology's expense, just to maintain some control with him. John Travolta specifically would have these instances where he'd want nothing else to do with it, just leave me alone.

L: So he tried to get out of Scientology?

J: Many times. Then, here we come with the freebies. The this, the that, the other thing.

L: They would send the auditors to his home, fly the auditors around the world, and the purpose was to maintain...

J: Good relationships with the person.

L: ...control over John Travolta. Did you ever hear anyone discuss "we need to send these auditors to keep control of John Travolta?"

J: Yes.

L: Who said that?

J: David Miscavige, Norman Starkey.

L: Any other celebrities that they sent auditors to their homes, or flew them...

J: Special treatment, yes, Tom Cruise. Now he came up and did all of his, I mean I've never seen a guy progress so quickly through the Scientology "levels". Tom Cruise went from nothing to Clear to OT to NOTs damn near in a season, like in the fall. I know because I personally sat down and did e-meter drills with him so that he could learn the solo art. I did solo drills with him, so that he could do that. When I first met him he was nothing.

L: Do you feel he did it...

J: I'm not done, let me finish. So then, now, even beyond him just being there, Lyman Spurlock arranged his entire divorce from Mimi Rogers for no charge, did all of his finances.

L: Scientology helped arrange the divorce from Mimi Rogers.

J: And did the settlement, yes. And the settlement, I think she got \$10 million.

L: \$10 million.

J: And then they took Tom Cruise...

L: Was Mimi Rogers a member of Scientology at the time?

J: She was said to be a "disaffected Scientologist." In other words she wasn't really having anything to do with Scientology.

L: There was no attorneys involved, was this just strictly Marty? Who arranged the divorce?

J: Lyman Spurlock. Lyman Spurlock did the.... David Miscavige was very instrumental in the divorce.

L: When you say he was instrumental, what do you think he did?

J: Basically told Tom Cruise, spoke to him and pointed out his deficiencies, like, your finances are totally under control, you are dyslectic, you're having a hard time reading things, there are certain things you're having a hard time with. We can help you. You just have to go along and do what we tell you.

L: Tom Cruise is dyslectic?

J: Yeah.

L: He has a hard time reading?

J: You know, transposing words.

L: They told Tom Cruise, just do what we tell you.

J: Pretty much, you're in good hands, we have all this experience, Lyman has corporate experience, he's a certified public accountant. He sat down and sat down and did all the audit and the books for Tom Cruises' finances. Then...

L: So they got all of Tom Cruise's finances, complete knowledge of this guy's life.

J: Everything, complete knowledge. This is what tops it off. He now likes this Nicole Kidman, and he has a fantasy of just running through a field of tall grass with Nicole Kidman. What happens is they bring up to the Gilman Hot Springs location and they have had people in Golden Era Productions for weeks staying up overnight, just extended schedules, de-rocking, plowing a field, planting tall wheat grass that will grow, and when Nicole Kidman came, here's a field, now they're running through the damn field of grass. It took weeks.

L: How much money do you think was spent to create that?

J: Tens of thousands of dollars.

L: To create a field of grass fantasy so that Tom Cruise could seduce Nicole Kidman at this Scientology compound called...

J: Golden Era Productions.

L: Golden Era Productions.

J: They were given beautiful lavish rooms with beautiful leather in it, things like...

L: Room service.

J: Maids, room service 5 star chef.

L: Were they charged? They had their own chef?

J: They had a French pastry chef in Scientology, and another just a 4 star regular cook chef, Carl, somebody, he was a South African fellow. Any meal they wanted on request.

L: Did this happen just one time.

J: No, multiple times. Every time, throughout his whole "OT levels" and in between movies. Now this was happening during the time he was doing that Days of Thunder, because Scientology even went so far as to develop for him a specific sound system because they said he was upset about the way they recorded his voice on the set. They actually put together a special recording system on the set for him and sent a couple of Scientology staff members, Steve Marlow and Luigi to be on the set of Days of Thunder to record. They were a complete nuisance to the cast and crew. They hated them. They came in wheeling this big thing in Montana on location, a stellar box recorder. All of this was developed and staff members worked day and night perfecting something specifically for him. Of course, he never paid for anything but the equipment.

L: So Scientology is also sending staff...

J: Stroking them hard, these celebrities.

L: ...staff members to travel with these celebrities. Are they observing and writing reports?

J: Experts.

L: Are they writing reports and sending them uplines on what they're seeing. They're like intelligence reports on who the celebrity is associating with, if the celebrity is having problems, if the celebrity needs to be handled. Did you ever see a report on a celebrity?

J: No, but I know those that were writing them, like I said, Luigi and...

L: Writing and sending them uplines. Who would get these?

J: David Miscavige.

L: So David Miscavige was providing people an entourage that were providing him with on sight observation and services.

J: The celebrities would "unusual services".

L: These were free, they weren't paying for this?

J: No.

L: What other celebrities would receive these gifts or staying at these elaborately expensive special quarters and special services. Travolta?

J: Travolta, Tom Cruise, Nicole Kidman...

L: Kirstie Alley?

J: Kirstie Alley. I only saw her one of two times though. Chick Corea would often be they're getting special handling, Ray Mithoff, all of their top auditors

L: They would bring out their top auditors, people that you would have to pay \$1,000 an hour at Flagg, \$500 if you requested Bob Mithoff you would be charged an outrageous amount, right? They were getting these services free from... Were there any other divorces that Scientology was involved in, or breaking up celebrity couples, or matching celebrity couples. Did you ever hear of anything?

J: Lisa Marie. When she started in with Michael Jackson. David Miscavige just had an insane fascination for Michael Jackson. The whole crew had to listen to his music. We would have special showings, make sure you watch the Thriller video.

L: The whole staff would have to watch Michael Jackson movies? Was this before Michael Jackson got an audit?

J: This was while all of this was going on. David would proudly announce how we just almost got Michael Jackson, we're doing everything that we can, and Lisa Marie, and. I guess it didn't work out.

L: Do you know anything about the details of what happened?

J: I'll tell you what I do know. They had a good relationship, however, with Jackson's people, to the point where L. Ron Hubbard Battlefield Earth album was coming out and the executive producer of the Thriller album was a man named Bruce Swedien. He

agreed to come out, based on the relationship that existed with Michael Jackson and Lisa to come out and work on the Battlefield Earth album. They shot themselves in the foot on that part, because Bruce Swedien's wife came in with him, I guess he didn't want to be alone, he had allocated a certain amount of days to work on this Battlefield project for them, and his wife wore cologne, perfume. She came into their magnificently elaborate studio wearing that cologne, and you know, no one at that base is allowed to wear any form of fragrance. The one person who was told, I forget her name, a little blonde girl, she was told to speak to his wife about her smelling, and she actually went to Bruce Swedien's wife and said that cologne you are wearing is irritating, it's stinking up the whole place. She was rough. She just had a fit, ran to Bruce and told him, and they left that day. He was like, "what kind of people are you? You people are nuts." The girl's name was Marilyn somebody. She ended up having to do conditions forever. That just blew it. She was told.

L: That blew the Michael Jackson deal?

J: Completely. I mean I know you didn't hear much about Michael Jackson after that.

L: Did he get any auditing?

J: I think he may have got something, I don't know personally, he might have gotten a little bit of something.

L: Do you think that there was anything suggested by the church that if Lisa Marie got him into Scientology, that she would be a special star, that she would obtain, be considered a very important person if she got him into Scientology?

J: I can't really say that. I don't have knowledge. I do have knowledge that she got as much free auditing as she wanted.

L: While she was working on Michael Jackson.

J: Right, prior to their marriage. She was married to someone... She was married to someone earlier, some guy that was a Scientologist, a Sea Org member, and she became infatuated with Michael Jackson, at which point that marriage ended. You asked me about divorces, the divorce between her and that fella that she was with was monitored and gotten done very quickly.

L: Do you think it was done to assist her to try to recruit Michael Jackson.

J: Yes. Lose this guy you're with.

L: Orders went to this Sea Org member.

J: The CO of CC, what was her name, Karen Hollander. I forget the name. It was her job to specifically handle the Lisa Marie. I had an auditor who was auditing her, that went

and audited her mother, and decided to get into a sexual relationship with Priscilla and ended up having to be... It was just a mess. Priscilla Presley, this is another one I would send out to Memphis, wherever she was, on a movie set, to just give her auditing for free.

L: Any other divorces besides the orchestration with Tom Cruise and Mimi Rogers and also Lisa Marie and her Sea Org husband. Anything else, how about John Travolta and Kelly Preston?

J: I know that was something that was cultivated along. Kelly Preston was not anyone I had heard of, and I had been dealing with John Travolta for years. Women were not always his preference. Then for her to suddenly show up.

L: You don't have any knowledge that David Miscavige might have said, "Look, you've got some public relations problems here, why don't you get married, here's somebody in Scientology that could help you smooth over this." If you don't have knowledge, you don't have...

J: No, I don't. I was just invited to their baby shower when their baby was born.

L: Let's finish this off, we're going to move the focus away from that, we'll come back to this. It seems like, from what you're saying these celebrities received tens of thousands, maybe hundreds of thousands of dollars in free auditing, they have special places they go, they get waited on hand and foot, in special elite compounds where they go so many times a year for free. They're not charged for this that you know of.

J: Or it could also be the circumstances. I want to leave this crack in the door, that they have already been billed for X amount of dollars, and this is just something that continually comes up. Never the expenses of flying an auditor here there and everywhere.

L: People, an entourage is sent with them when they go on set, and this entourage is sending out knowledge reports written intelligence reports on what's happening.

J: In Days of Thunder, I recall that specifically with Tom Cruise. We actually tried to create a mix trailer because they didn't like what the music studio was doing. They became so disruptive to Tom Cruise in his film making that they eventually had to step aside. It was threatening his career.

L: What is the real salaries? Let's talk about Miscavige and the top people. Everybody else is down there making \$15, \$24 a week. What does a Sea Org member make a week now.

J: Now, I wouldn't have that information.

L: When you left in '92, the average Sea Org member was making?

J: \$32 a week.

L: 90% of the staff is making literally nothing?

J: Right.

L: How much, Miscavige claims he makes \$40,000 a year as head of the church, that's his tax claim. How much does he make in terms of other things? Have you ever seen him?

J: He has several cars. All of his clothes are tailor-made, and not paid by him, gold, silver, in brick forms, stashed in safe.

L: Gold and silver bricks in a safe, how can a person who makes \$42,000 a year have gold and silver bricks?

J: I mean lots of them, I'm not talking about a few. Gold coins. He showed me his safe one time, I couldn't believe it. Gold and silver bars stacked up, coins, rare coins, jewelry.

L: Was he a rich child?

J: No, not at all. His father is dirt poor.

L: He's now in Scientology and he has a safe full of gold and silver.

J: He has the most elaborate stereo system of anything and any place I've ever seen.

L: How much do you think the stereo system might be worth?

J: \$20,000.

L: A man who makes \$40,000 a year with a \$20,000 stereo?

J: All the furniture is hand made, designed to fit the place where he is.

L: Hand-made furniture. How much do you estimate the furnishings of his apartment at?

J: \$30,000, \$40,000.

L: \$30,000, \$40,000 in furnishings for his apartment. How many people wait on him hand and foot, how many servants does he have?

J: Personal?

L: Personal and cooks.

J: I'd say a staff of 15, 20 people.

L: 15 or 20 people that are provided to wait on him at the expense of Scientology. Were these people, if they were in the real world, they would be making \$18,000 to \$25,000 a year for being servants and maids?

J: Right.

L: So, he may be receiving in services paid by the church, several hundred thousand a year. How about travel and vacations.

J: Unlimited, and always in business and first class.

L: First class, business. Do they have a jet they fly him around in? Is there a personal jet for Scientology?

J: I know they used Travolta's jet one time, and I know they've flown on the French Concord just so they could see the curvature of the earth. Ray Mithoff and David Miscavige, this kind of extravagance. All the clothes are tailor-made.

L: Tailor made, what do you mean?

J: A tailor in Los Angeles has their measurements, they do the designs and it's a back and forth process.

L: Did the average Sea Org member have tailor-made clothes?

J: Christ, no.

L: How much do you estimate his suits and clothing cost per suit?

J: I'd say about a couple of thousand dollars a suit.

L: Maybe \$2,000 a suit. How many suits and things do you think he has?

J: Closets full, I mean special closets were made to accommodate his clothes. He has rooms, probably as big as your whole place that is nothing but closets.

L: A room that is as big as my whole lower apartment, we're talking 320 square feet.

J: Just for his shoes, the alligator, the ostrich skin, the this, the lizards, the that.

L: He is buying the best, give me shoes that cost more than \$50.

J: Shoes that cost of hundreds of dollars. They all have to have their own personal cedar shoe trees in them. There has to be cedar where the stuff is stored. This is very elaborate.

L: How much do you estimate his wardrobe? You're talking about more than 20 suits.

J: I'm talking like 40, 50 suits.

L: 50 suits as much as \$2,000 a suit. How many pairs of shoes?

J: It just seems like it goes on endlessly.

L: Could he have 20 pair of shoes?

J: Hell no, about 60.

L: 60 pairs of shoes, costing up to several hundred dollars a pair. We're talking...

J: Hand made, hand designed.

L: So you're talking about a wardrobe of \$150,000.

J: Yeah, \$200,000.

L: Jewelry.

J: Fancy watches.

L: And a man who makes \$40,000.

J: And his wife has all that too. She has equal closet space.

L: She has an equal backing.

J: Beautiful clothes, everything, go to the best stores, tailored.

L: Where does this money come for all of this personal extravagance?

J: The church. The backs of slaves.

L: People making \$30 a week pay for him to live like this?

J: Yes.

L: Does the average staff member know that he has all this?

J: The ones that are their can see it with their own eyes. Probably, not the ones that are not there.

L: There is nothing published about his suits, the cost of his..

J: Yeah, he has at least three cars too. The one car that he had, he had just bought a brand new Miata. He also had two other cars, one was a Nissan Maxima, brand new, and then he had 4 cars, and he had a van.

L: He had 4 cars, were they new?

J: Brand new.

L: Here's a man making \$40,000 a year with 4 brand new cars, \$150,00 worth of clothes, a safe full of gold and silver, and his wife with matching jewelry. Does his wife have fancy jewelry?

J: Yes. Real diamonds with a sparkle that will blind you.

L: Is her family very wealthy?

J: They are as poor as dirt. Her mother was married to a black man, they struggled, he was a little fix-it man. That's how they lived.

L: Tell me more about this. Does Miscavige go to Reno and Las Vegas and gamble, does he take cruises, does he use the facility?

J: He goes out on helicopter rides, he goes to the Bahamas, he gets special boats, special launches to take him fishing, cruise the islands.

L: Does he go on vacations like normal Sea Org members..

J: I'd say he goes on vacation 4 times a year.

L: How long are these vacations?

J: A couple weeks, 3 weeks.

L: Two or 3 weeks each, he could be on vacation 10 weeks of the year?

J: I would think that was 15.

L: 12 to 15? Who pays for these vacations?

J: The church.

L: All expenses?

J: All expenses paid. He doesn't have to pay a damn thing.

L: These vacations could cost, a week in the Bahamas, the way he lives, how much do you think it could cost? Does he go first class, does he get a nice room? He doesn't get an economy room.

J: He lives on the ship where he has a special room for him, where he has all his slaves. But, when he goes to do his other activities, like he wants to go on a submarine, or he wants to get a charter, a smaller boat to run around, or go on a helicopter and look at the islands, or whatever the hell, this kind of thing.

L: The church pays for it?

J: Yeah.

L: Does he ever go on a vacation away from the church? Just he and his wife take a little trip?

J: Yes, they have, but often he doesn't take her.

L: He goes without her.

J: He takes some of his other buddies, other Scientology friends.

L: Marty Rathburn, does he take the top people?

J: Mark Yeager, Lyman, Norman. Him and Norman are inseparable when it comes to vacation.

L: So they go off on themselves, without Scientology to see...

J: They have Marty with them, all the cover people are watching them, making sure. Security often travels with them too from Hemet California, they take a few of those people with them.

L: So, there is a place in New Mexico, a house, some little retreat center, do you know anything about this house?

J: Is this where people get medical treatment?

L: I don't know, you've heard about a house where they're getting medical treatment?

J: I heard there was a place where some doctor was doing this medical treatment on cancer, some kind of cancer treatment on Scientology people in Mexico.

L: In New Mexico.

J: New Mexico, no, I don't know.

L: New Mexico or Arizona, nothing about a special house down there?

J: No.

L: Do you know any other places where David Miscavige spends more than you would expect for a guy making \$40,000 a year in a church that is very conscious of expenditures, where no one else is allowed any luxuries? Do you know any other places where he's spending lots of money?

J: Besides the Bahamas, Paris, you know, Copenhagen, wherever he goes. Where there's a Scientology place, when he finishes his business there, he has the luxuries of...

L: When he goes out to eat for dinner, does he spend a lot of money at fancy places?

J: I can only imagine because I know when I did, I've gotten bills that were up over \$500 for a meal.

L: When you did this? Did anybody ever say anything to you?

J: Never.

L: Tell me, is there an unwritten code that the top people in Scientology...

J: Do whatever they want to.

L: Name the people that can do whatever they want.

J: I'm talking about during my time period, up to 1987 when I was an executive, and then I've seen it. Norman Starkey, Dave Miscavige, Shelly Miscavige, also at the time Mark Yeager, who still in my estimation tried to be frugal, because CSI was footing most of the bill for everything that he did. Marty Rathburn spares no expense.

L: First class everything.

J: I've got to have PIs, I've got to have this, whatever he wants, it's pretty unlimited. Norman Starkey is very extravagant. The guy has to have the best of everything, his wife, Maria Starkey.

L: Would it be safe to say these people are being paid big money?

J: Giant, giant money.

L: How much do you think a year, in real money, when you take all the resources, all the assets, all the expense accounts?

J: Three quarters of a million dollars.

L: They are making \$750,000?

J: They're spending that much.

L: Using it for their private pleasure and whatever else. The majority Scientology staff member are making \$30, \$40, \$50 a week, living in would you say good conditions?

J: No, horrid conditions.

L: Horrid conditions. And these guys are up on the pile, taking, creaming the organization for everything they can get. Do you have any knowledge that they've taken money in for themselves and moved it into bank accounts in their own names in other countries anywhere else?

J: I know that they have done that, but I don't know any specifics about that. There was a point in tape where they were threatening bank account freezes on Dave Miscavige, Norman, and a few other people. They actually did freeze his bank account. But that was just a laughing joke. There is no way you could stop money from coming into that.

L: He could take it out of any church. David Miscavige, does he have enough control that he could walk into any church, walk into their bank accounts, and order the bank account to be written over to him on the spot?

J: On the spot.

L: And it would be done?

J: Mm-hmm.

L: You have no doubt that if he ordered it, no matter if it was a franchise, a separate franchise..

J: Whatever.

L: If he walked into Narconon and said...

J: "I need the money", it would be gone.

L: ..write me a check for all the money in the account, it would be done, and they would immediately comply with his order?

J: Right.

L: Why?

J: Because of the FBO system, the Flag Banking System. All of those people are normally brought up to Gold and indoctrinated to go with the orders. They try to explain to them. Their basic idea is get as much money as you can and send it to him. When they come there, you pay for everything.

L: If you can recall anything where any of the top people have private bank accounts, if you know of Scientology assets being put into private accounts for security reserve, anything like that...

J: Cyprus, I know about that, we can talk about that tomorrow.

L: Cyprus, yeah, we'll talk about that and take it from there.

[END OF TAPE]

Tape 3, August 25, 1998

Lawrence Wollersheim and Jesse Prince

L: 4,5,6,7,8,9. Today is the 25th of August. This is Lawrence Wollersheim with Jesse Prince. We're discussing his years in Scientology. Jesse is probably the highest-ranking person to leave Scientology; at one time you were second in command of all of Scientology. As I mention every day, Jesse is all you remember, as factually as possible, the names of people that were involved in these situations and nothing more, nothing less. If you don't know about it, you don't know. What we were doing yesterday is we were going through the suicide list, and we were up to some of these here. If you could start with the one that we left off and just start talking about them.

J: I think we ended up on John Peterson. We spoke about BB Mauer. Then about the end of case auditing, I added a person named Diane Morrison.

L: Tell us what end of case auditing is and Diane Morrison.

J: End of case auditing basically is when the person is told by an official in Scientology, a high level therapist, or case supervisor that there is nothing more that they can do to physically live and they need to just let go of the body and die. That's what it is. I did a whole post [on the Internet] on this Diane Morrison, I went into great detail about it. I don't think there's anything more to add to that.

L: Can you summarize.

J: I'll just say the event. I'll just say what happened. This is a staff member that had been on staff for at least 10 years. She was a very healthy woman, kind of a California girl type

of person, always was very healthy. She married a fellow named Shawn Morrison, who was the port captain at Gilman Hot Springs, which is basically a public relations position for the surrounding locals. At any rate, this woman ended up having cancer, and it was, you know, Scientology doesn't believe in chemotherapy or anything like that. They actually have policy letters against gamma rays, this is a severely antiquated idea, they don't move with modern technology. So, this woman was encouraged to not get the standard treatment available to cure cancer.

L: Do you think financial considerations were any part of it?

J: Probably the very first. I say that, I know that's an opinion, but I know that every person that gets pregnant at Gilman Hot Springs are sent to the city of Riverside, or California to stand in a welfare line to get an abortion paid for. They are told to give, there's a little pack that they read so that they know to disassociate themselves from Scientology and the Sea Org as much as possible, so that it's not known where they're coming from. They give as little information as possible to receive an abortion. They won't even pay for the abortions of the women, even though they enforce them medically. They don't spend a lot of money on the staff members.

L: Do you mean that there is a written pack of materials in Scientology that they give to the staff members to go have their medical services paid for by the state?

J: Right.

L: And in this pack it tells them to hide their association with Scientology, to defraud the government out of medical costs that should be paid by this organizations that's bringing in hundreds of millions a year, and has these staff members that it should be taking care of their medical care as part of their overall care?

J: Right.

L: Has this been a long-term practice of Scientology?

J: Yes it has. Even for a toothache sometimes you have to wait for weeks to get a mere \$50 to go and get some dental work, or \$150. Very often staff suffer in pain. I know it happened to me, I had an abscessed tooth, I had to wait about 2 weeks to have money to be able to go to a dentist, just to get that taken care of. Suffering with medical illness is a common thing for a staff member in Scientology. They have their policies, called CSW, Completed Staff Work, where the person has to do all of this research and everything about their illness or whatever they need with quotes, etc. on and on before money consideration will be given to them to treat a medical situation. However, sometimes a person is just so besides themselves in pain, or just simply depressed, or no will to pursue the arduous course just to get some medical treatment that they'll often go neglected, and a more serious situation will develop. That is the normal procedure for medical attention to staff members in the Sea Org.

L: Would it be fair to say that over the years, like Scientology claims it has 13,000 staff members worldwide. Do they do this in other countries as well, use the government welfare systems to pay medical bills? Do you have any knowledge about that?

J: I have noted they do it in Copenhagen, I'm not sure they do it in England, but I know they do it in Copenhagen.

L: Is it possible, over 40 years, with all of these staff members going to get Medicare or welfare, to cover medical costs, that we could be talking about thousands of dollars of fraud on the government welfare.

J: Hundreds of thousands of dollars of fraud.

L: Possibly even millions over 40 years, with 13,000.

J: Yeah, yes.

L: You were saying earlier that you thought the main reason that Scientology denied medical care was because of its cost.

J: Financial cost.

L: So chemotherapy could run \$10,000, the chance of a staff member getting \$10,000 for medical care was about... Is there much of a chance that they would ever see that kind of money?

J: Never. Never, never, never. I have never seen that amount of money. As a matter of fact, I had to have an operation when I was there, and fortunately I was in a high position. It still took me a month, I had a deviated septum, which I was very vulnerable to allergies and things, and I actually had to have an operation to have my nose re-broken and re-set. It cost I think \$4,000 and it took me about 2 months to get the money. And that's extremely fast, and that is like the exception, simply because I was in a high position.

L: You were second in command of Scientology.

J: Right, and it still took me 2 months. Had it been anyone else, it would never be a point of consideration, just like no. Live with it.

L: So, this woman was denied cancer treatment.

J: There are two names I have to bring up here. Megan Shields and Gene Denk. For the Los Angeles area, these were the two Scientology doctors, and they would follow Scientology implicitly, in denying medical treatment to staff members. This Diane Morrison was seeing Megan Shields, and also Dr. Denk was associated with it. She was given this end of cycle, where she was basically told by the doctors that she was riddled by cancer, after running to Mexico and doing some hocus pocus stuff for whatever,

getting some kind of cancer treatment. She went down there a couple of times, that there was nothing she could do, and she was going to die. She needed to this end of cycle. The woman ended up not dying from the cancer itself, but she died from starving herself to death. They watched her, and I seen her turn to skin and bones, and then, they didn't want her to die at Golden Era. They forced this guy, Shawn Morrison, to take Diane Morrison to his mother's house where she was placed underneath an air conditioner. She died within a couple of days, from starvation.

L: So here they have a long term staff member who's given them 10 years of their life, and they didn't even want the person to die on the grounds of the church because...

J: It would raise suspicion.

L: It would raise suspicion. Would it be legitimate suspicion?

J: Of course, they sat and told the person to die and watched her kill herself with stony faces and told her she was doing the right thing.

L: This Gene Dink and Megan Shields, were they aware of the fraud on the welfare department? Did they ever participate or have any knowledge of sending people to the welfare, or sending people to Medicare to deny they were associated with Scientology to receive free treatment?

J: I have no direct knowledge of that, but I do believe that could be the case. I have no direct knowledge, and I'll just say that.

L: Were these doctors, were they following the medical guidelines of their profession when they told this person that they had to get ready to die, or were they following possibly directions from Scientology?

J: Directions from Scientology.

L: Who was giving them orders?

J: Probably the case supervisors, which probably... Ray Mithoff or some other person like that was over this Diane Morrison, as a case handler.

L: In other words, the case supervisors in Scientology were telling the doctors when to dispense additional medicine and when not to?

J: They would more specifically, tell them what types of medicine they could dispense, or how often, or how much.

L: What therapies to use?

J: Yes, what therapies to use.

L: What qualifications did these case supervisors have to make medication and medical therapy to allow or deny these... that then these doctors would follow the directions of the case supervisors, and not their own medical training?

J: None whatsoever, none whatsoever. Classic case in point, Lisa McPherson. She has trouble. She apparently goes psychotic, instead of taking her to a place where there are trained professionals to help her, and to give her the medicine that she needs, they take her, lock her up in a room, put her under guard, pass notes. Next thing you know, she's dead. Those are all instructions that people in Scientology are trained to do, to deny proper medical treatment and people end up dead.

L: Do you know any other end of case situations, where people were told "get ready to die"?

J: There is a fellow that had something wrong, I think he had an aneurysm or something wrong with his head. I do not remember his name. He was at the Gold Base. I noted that happened to him, right as he was dying, he was told to do that. The next thing you know he was dead. Now, they didn't know what was wrong with him. I think he had an aneurysm, I know he was in extreme pain. But I know for sure that he was not taken to a qualified hospital so that he could be examined when he first started to complain about having bad symptoms or headaches. It was just take your cal-mag and shut up. Take your vitamins, get your [?] run-down, next thing you know his head blows up and he's dead.

L: Do you know of any situations where people have died in any organization and their bodies were removed from the organization to make it look like they didn't die, whether of natural causes, so the coroner, or whoever would be going to another location, away from Scientology to examine the body and determine the cause of death?

J: The only one that I have specific knowledge of at this time that I recall is Diane Morrison.

L: Let's keep going with the next person.

J: I think that's the end of that list. Margery Wakefield, I made a note of this because I just remember hearing Marty Rathburn saying Margery Wakefield, this, Margery Wakefield that. It's not a case I was involved in or familiar with, but I was just curious myself of what it was all about.

L: You never heard any more than that?

J: No.

L: Margie went psychotic and I'll let you read her story, you can read it personally and see what happened, we have her affidavit.

J: What I recall is Marty just trying to discredit her as already being a crazy person in a meeting, I'll read that and then we'll come back to that. The next one I have down here is [reading] "Reverse auditing was done on Arthur Running Bear. He did become psychotic from the auditing." I make this note because I know Arthur Running Bear. He was in RPF in the 70's, late 70's. I remember being told that something was wrong with him. He was kinda off. He was a little crazy, and that he was being audited. At that time, I mean, I'm talking 1978, '79, to change his mind about some things, I don't know. What I got from that was that he was a cultural person, with Indian cultural beliefs, and because he was that way, he was considered to be odd and strange, and needed to be worked on to change his ideas about spirituality, the role of Native Americans, and this kind of thing. In all honesty, looking back on it now, they were just straight prejudiced against him, could not stand that he was anything besides an American straight blue-eyed white person, and felt that they needed to do a bunch of work on him to make him like they were.

L: Did you ever hear anything about him being reverse audited?

J: No, but I know he got a lot of auditing to change him. Whether or not we're talking semantics is just another point.

L: Have you ever heard of anyone in Scientology talking about reverse auditing someone to drive them crazy if they were a security risk, or to cripple someone psychologically so that they really were non-functional, that might be a threat to the organization? Have you ever heard anyone talk about reverse auditing, or deliberately using psychological techniques to eliminate some problem?

J: The only thing I can think of in relation to that was this roll back thing, that they practice in Scientology.

L: Roll back, what's roll back?

J: Roll back is a process that I used to get daily dispatches on it from L. Ron Hubbard. What it was is a process to catch a spy within the organization. If you were having problems, or not doing exactly what you were told, you could be subjected to this roll back procedure, where they mention Sirhan Sirhan in this, where what is it? Somebody in the organization is saying something like a plant, and people who have duped by other people. So they get on a meter and do all of this fool around, to try to find out who's influencing you, how were you duped away from what Scientology is telling you to do, as opposed to what you see in here. Then they go through this whole procedure, boiling it down to a person. Then that person, quite naturally gets exploded. At that point he is given intense sec-checking, he is put under stress to do physical work, to exhaust him. They are also put on a fore-shortened schedule.

L: What do you mean a fore-shortened schedule?

J: Fore-shortened sleep schedule. Deliberately.

L: Is this to wear down their resistance?

J: And then you have to speak to a master of arms for 4 or 5 hours a day who is telling how treasonous you are, usurping the organization, and showing you this and showing you this, and just showing you what a bad person you are. It just puts you in a frame of, "Oh my God, I'm just so far away from what I'm trying to do." It makes you doubt your whole self. It basically makes you crazy. I have seen people go psychotic and go through their type 3 handling and all of this stuff from intense sleep deprivation, food deprivation, constant harrangement, and the physical exhaustion of the work that they make you do.

L: This was done on suspected spies in the organization.

J: Or even if you were a dupe.

L: If you were duped by a suspected spy, they would do this to you as well.

J: Right.

L: Did this happen often. Did you ever hear about the roll back being used on people.

J: Well, as a matter of fact, and I hate to say this, this is what L. Ron Hubbard piloted with me, when I was there. He would send me, he was telling me "I'm having this idea, there's some spies in your organization...." He gave some theory about these things and then he said this is what I want you to do. It started out with just a 2-question thing, and I'd send the results back.

L: Were you doing the processes, were you doing them on someone else?

J: I was the one asking the questions. First it turned out to be a two question process. Then all of this investigation roll back, on and on and on. Then he came out with this, he said, "Ok, now we're going to check for evil purposes." Then you would have to put a person on a E-meter and ask them about their evil purposes. What is that, what is that? You had to get it from them. Whether or not a person had one, or whatever, it was just made up, it was mind-altering coercive. "I must be evil, now I'm being asked for evil purposes, now they must be there." By the time you're finished with that evil purpose rundown, you really don't know, you have no more values, no more foundation, from thought to even spring from this like, look at this now, look how crazy I am now.

L: Were you ever instructed, when you were auditing people on the evil purpose rundown, to just keep at it until you got them to tell an evil purpose.

J: Oh absolutely, by L. Ron Hubbard, sure.

L: If they said they didn't have one, and the meter didn't read on one, then you would keep asking them?

J: I would have to let them know again what an evil purpose...go over all the definitions. Then if I couldn't get them to spit out one specifically about this specific question, then I would have them to give one so similar and just word it a little different. It would be them, yeah.

L: You would keep working, even if they would say they didn't have any evil purpose. What if the meter didn't respond?

J: You know, it's all hypothetical with the meter, because what is the meter besides nothing. It reads randomly anyway. 99.99 times it's going to do something anyway, because that's the way it's set up. It's going to stop, it's going to jerk, it's going to do something. If you keep badgering a person it's going to do something. The meter, that's nothing.

L: What's the next thing on the list?

J: Something about the kids. Well, what I've seen with the kids that's scary to me is that children that do survive the forced abortion rule, the ones that lived in the LA area, those children are born, and instead of given milk or you know, breast feeding them, L. Ron Hubbard figured out this barley formula that the children drink instead of milk. Just looking at it now, those children were so under-nourished, just not whole, complete children, because L. Ron Hubbard figures barley water is better than milk. This is what these children, some solution of barley soaked in water and poured over it, that's what they had. I've seen those children, 15 to 20 of them in a filthy room, filthy carpet, food everywhere, and playing. If one of them got out of line, they'd just lock them in a room and let them scream itself to death, or scream itself to sleep. They're just started out from the beginning to be cadets, like little cadet children. They're put in this thing, the little cadet org. They make them do what's called rocks and shoals, where if they do something that they weren't told to do, they have to do sit-ups, push-ups from the cradle they are punished. From the cradle the children are punished.

L: How are they rewarded?

J: They would have 15 extra minutes to play. Never clothes, never a thing to have, just like a tiny bit more freedom, a little extra food, maybe an ice cream.

L: Were any of the women that were...

J: And the parents don't get a chance to see the children but an hour a day. An hour a day because they're working on their posts, by the time they get home the children are in bed. So if they're lucky in a week maybe they've seen them maybe 4 or 5 hours. The children are basically neglected, turned over to these nannies who are giving them barley and raising the children. The children have no concept of parents and family and unity. It's all Scientology. It is just pitiful, it's pitiful. It's horrifying.

L: Were any of these women that were told to get abortions, were any of them past 3 months pregnant?

J: I don't know, I can't say.

L: Let's keep going on.

J: [Reading] "FACT sources describe a young guy who tried to commit suicide in early 1992 at the Gold Scientology Center. He was in his teens or early 20's. He was the junior of a guy named Olf, who was a foreigner, maybe from Sweden. This guy was in the mixing group with the sound people. He had brown hair, pudgy and boyish looking. Something happened to cause him to attempt suicide at the Gold Center." This person's name is Seth Thomas. He has blonde hair. His mother was Susie, Sue Price.

L: The Sue Price?

J: The Sue Price was his mother.

L: The Sue Price who does the copyrights for Scientology?

J: I don't know what she does now, she was always a management program. She was married to a fellow named Bill Price, who was the Flag banking officer in the Flag org. Seth was another child from an earlier marriage. He grew up in the cadet org, he was just a completely depressed illiterate child. He wouldn't spell, he couldn't write, he couldn't read that well, and he was almost 20 years old.

L: Isn't Scientology the group that says it has this great study technology that it wants to get in all the schools and it will raise IQ. This was a kid that was subject to the study technology and the best of Scientology education for 20 years, and he can't read?

J: Couldn't hardly read, couldn't hardly write. I mean write like a kid, letters not even in the lines. Seth Thomas. Instead of writing, he would print. It was just pathetic. Everyone made fun of him, Rick Cruze makes fun of him, screams at him at the tops of his lungs, slaps him in the back of the head. Olf, this guy from Sweden, tells him how dumb he is, laughs at him. Then he said, you have to do key to life because you're so stupid. This little kid was the brunt of everything. Now at this time I was working in there, this is after I'm removed, and now wherever they go I have to go with them. We're on the sound. If they went on an event they're dragging me every where.

L: He was being harassed because he wasn't performing up to Scientology standards?

J: Right. And he was illiterate and slow, and extremely depressed. This happened just when I was leaving.

L: Did people know that he was depressed?

J: Yep.

L: Did he ever threaten that he was suicidal?

J: Yes he did that when I was there.

L: How did they handle it when he said that he was suicidal?

J: Sent him to ethics, to do conditions and this that and the other thing. It didn't change, he was just a still pitiful pathetic child.

L: Was he ever physically beaten?

J: Physically slapped around, pushed and stuff, yes.

L: Was that normal?

J: For him, yeah, because he was like the whipping boy, the kicking boy.

L: What do you think caused him, do you have any idea what caused his suicide?

J: I think, he spoke to me about it, he felt hopeless, he felt like no one loved him. He felt like he would never do anything in life because he was as old as he was and still could hardly read and write. I've had conversations with this kid.

L: And then he killed himself.

J: Well, he attempted suicide, threatened suicide.

L: And then he attempted it, and finally something happened to him after that. Do you know what happened to him after that?

J: I heard, and this is only a rumor, that he was quickly gotten off the Int base and put in LA to be put down there to be in the cadet org down there, which he preferred, because he hated being up there at Gilman Hot Springs because of the way he was treated. He hated it.

L: Physical punishment, have you ever seen anyone physically punished, hit, slapped?

J: Yes.

L: Can you describe who...

J: David Miscavige got upset with Marty because he wasn't following some order and took a stack of folders like this, hit him in the head, then physically grabbed him and started slamming him against the walls and punching him as hard as he could.

L: Punching him, in the body?

J: Yeah, and in the face.

L: As hard as he could.

J: I've also seen him take women and throw them around. Terry Gamboa. Physically slam them into a wall. Marian Bender, another one. These women would come to me shaking and crying, like, "Oh God, somebody make him stop."

L: He physically assaulted women?

J: Yes.

L: Did he ever slap them other than throwing them up against the wall, hit them with a fist?

J: I think just throwing them up against the wall. Grabbed their ass, just anything to degrade them.

L: Have you ever seen any other staff member hit, beaten, whipped, anything like that by any other staff member in Scientology?

J: Yeah, John Ward. I saw David Miscavige spit in his face, punch him, slap him.

L: Literally spit?

J: Spit in his face. And he was held by others, Sea Org members.

L: Several other Sea Org members?

J: Like two on each arm, while he spit and punched and hit him.

L: Where did he punch him?

J: In the body.

L: Why was Miscavige doing this?

J: Because he said he was a traitor and treasonous to the Sea Org. He went the route out, said to hell with this. He was under that 11 man Com Ev where they brought them, made them run around and pose and just degraded incessantly and then put them on Happy Valley on armed guard and all of this crap.

L: Anyone else you've ever seen beaten or hit, assaulted in Scientology?

J: There was another little guy named John who wore glasses, little mustache. He was brought in front of David Miscavige and he spit in his face too and slapped him around.

L: Physically slapped him in the face?

J: Yeah, spit running off these people's face. A heavy spitting period, this is late '82.

L: Have you ever seen anyone else other than David Miscavige assault or hit or punish physically, harm another staff member?

J: Besides him, I'd have to say no.

L: Let's go on with the next one.

J: So we were talking about Seth, that's what I know about little Seth. Cat Morrow. I remember her.

L: Rick Clinger's wife, Cat Clinger is her real name.

J: She wasn't his wife at this time, he was married to someone else. Her name was Cat Morrow when I was there. She was the head of the Wolly unit, Wolly World, data collection. They called it Wolly World. She was under extreme pressure at a point in time where she wasn't sleeping, she wasn't eating, she was being screamed at 60% of the day, just working day and night, and she flipped. At which point, you know, it seems like people do just go to a certain point and it's not like you can say, I'm sorry, let's go to bed now. No, they don't sleep anymore, they are over the edge. She got the standard treatment of being locked up in a room by herself to scream and just do everything. No restraint, physically.

L: They physically locked her up when she went psychotic?

J: Yeah. They hold you under guard when that happens.

L: Against your will?

J: Absolutely. Just like Lisa McPherson, the standard practice. You are incarcerated at that point, and you're not going to be un-incarcerated until they think you're OK.

L: So is that all you know about Cat, that she was locked up? Do you know of other people that were locked up, who went psychotic against their will?

J: Yes, well one person that Stacy Young and I had to watch a girl named Teresa, we were watching her together.

L: Teresa, what was her last name?

J: I don't know her last name. She was a staff member at Gold. There was some big deadline about getting up a new Mark 7, and she was a Spanish girl, a cultural girl. She had skin pretty much the color of mine, black hair, very pretty girl, young girl, about 19 or 20. She was made to stay up day and night, soldering wires and crap to the e-meter, like on assembly. She started to loose it. The higher RC was saying she's out ethics, she's making overt products, that's why. Then the next thing you know, this girl is speaking and in a place so different than anyone else. She's gone over the edge, she's babbling. She's talking all out of her head. They immediately took her from the Hemet base and put her in Happy Valley, which is a little compound that they have where the children stay, it's by an Indian reservation. My God, talk about first hand experience. Stacy and I and that girl Susie Watson Taylor and a couple of guys, it was like 5 of us watching this girl, keeping her confined to a house. One time she got out of the house and there was this huge cactus out in the yard, and she pulled with her bare hand, one of the leaves off, threw it on the ground, and jumped up and down on the damn thing. I mean, her body was pierced everywhere. She didn't feel a thing, she was laughing. I along with a bunch of other people, pulled the thorns out of her, put hydrogen peroxide on her, and she had a fever, but still would not sleep, would not sleep. This went on for about 3 days. Then she started getting little cat naps. Now, I am so worried, because this woman is talking in voices. She hit me harder than I think I've ever been hit in my life, and now here comes Dr. Denk out there. He has five of us hold her down and he gives her a shot, to make her go to sleep. Her last words is, before she goes under, she looks me right in the eyes and says, "I'm not going to forget you for this Jesse, I'm going to get you." And she conks out. Me of all people. Everyone watched her, she ways this to me. Well, she slept for 2 hours and she was right the hell back up. They tried to give her pills and all of this stuff. Anyway, to make a long story short, it took about a month and a half for this woman to start sleeping again, and then making her eat again. She was getting introspection run down, passing notes back and forth to the case supervisor. She says she wants to go, no one will let her go.

L: She said she wanted to leave, they wouldn't let her out?

J: No.

L: Did Denk know she had gone psychotic?

J: Yes, that's why he was out there giving her a shot. We were worried that she was going to die because she wasn't sleeping, and was getting wilder and wilder and wilder. She ran off and just ran up a damn mountain. No one could even follow her. She was running faster than the dogs.

L: They have dogs out there, chasing...

J: No, just dogs hanging around, ranch dogs. Dogs couldn't even keep up with her. This woman had super-human strength.

L: She was psychotic?

J: Completely, utterly, totally.

L: Were they worried about the woman or were they worried that the Riverside police might come onto the compound?

J: It goes beyond that, her parents were calling, wanting to know where her daughter is.

L: Were they lying to the parents?

J: Yes.

L: The parents were worried and they were lying.

J: She's fine, she's just been working too hard, she's just taking a break. Wouldn't let the parents talk to her, but then, after a while, she was allowed to call her parents. She was told what the hell to say.

L: She was told what to tell them?

J: Yeah.

L: So she was held against her will, her parents were lied to, this was in Riverside County, and Denk knew that she was being held against her will when he administered the shots to her?

J: Right.

L: Did Denk, did you ever hear of Denk going to anyone else who was being held against his will and giving them medication of any kind, anyone that was in a psychotic state or locked up?

J: No, that's the only one that I personally was a witness to.

L: Let's go on, unless there's more to that.

J: The girl finally came to herself a little better, she was immediately sent away. Stacy could give you a statement, because we were doing this with the girl together. [Reading] "Tom Cruise, he actually became psychotic during auditing. Cruise was on OT III and Scientology had to bring him back to the base because he looked so bad." This is what I know about Tom Cruise. He was brought into Scientology and went into great detail about all the trappings of yesterday. This is what I recall about this thing that you mention. He got onto OT III and he had black circles under his eyes. He was like pretty screwed up, pretty screwed up. I mean nothing was making sense. He had these sound people on the set of Days of Thunder, feeding his ego, telling him how horrible

everybody else was. He was having difficulty with some of the movie people. Rob Howard ended up coming out to the Int base. He wasn't impressed at all. He came once and never came back again that I know of. It was very strange, at this time that Tom Cruise was screwing around with Scientology. After OT III he just got that pasty skin and that foolish look. He didn't want to come back, he didn't want to screw around with any more. He just wanted Scientology to be away from him. He wanted to do no more auditing, just nothing with any of that stuff, just go back to Hollywood and his home.

L: He wanted to leave Scientology?

J: Of course they really, oh, a horrible thing, someone gave you a wrong command or something. Something gets exploded at the base because he's nuts now. Of course they made him nuts. He was taken off any kind of real heavy auditing, and just let's have some fruit, let's get exercise, come to the exercise room, let's play basket ball, let's do this. I was leaving as that was going on, this is '92. This is when I'm leaving, I'm leaving and this is going on.

L: Do you know of any celebrities that have gone psychotic with Scientology auditing, who just went nuts?

J: John Travolta.

L: Do you know any more about that?

J: Well, it's happened several times.

L: He's gone psychotic several times during Scientology auditing?

J: Yes, just a fit, throwing a fit, wanting nothing else to do with Scientology, and then they'd go and get him again. Two times that I know of, once this was when that movie Saturday Night Fever came out, and he was good friends with Spanky Taylor. Suddenly she disappeared pregnant with her child, now in RPF crying all the time. That was a person that he wanted to have contact with in relationship in Scientology. They tricked him and told him "If you bring the movie so that all the base orgs can see it, and make an appearance, specifically for the RPF, that they will let him see Spanky. Of course he did all of that and they didn't let him see Spanky. He just went nuts, he threw a damn fit. He's actually the one, Spanky's secretary is the one that actually saved Spanky from Scientology. There was a period of time where John wanted nothing to do with Scientology, he was happy that Spanky was safe. But they still had control of Spanky to use her to keep him going. That was one time. Another time he was having a relationship with another homosexual man and said he was going to marry the man. Oh my God...

L: Was that Mark Baracy?

J: I don't know which one it was, there's been more than one. His was back in '81, I believe it was. Oh my God, now he's a homosexual, now he's a fit to be tied, because he's done with Scientology. If they can't handle that he's homosexual, too damn bad. So now people, auditors and CSs are going out to his place, where he lived in Florida, where he had the landing strip, just staying with him weeks at a time, trying to re-convert him.

L: Just talking him into it, pressuring him?

J: Right.

L: Do you think these celebrities have the feeling that they...

J: They can't live without Scientology. The ones that are deeply into it, they think that they've got to have it.

L: Do you think any of them are concerned that all of their confessions are in the hands of Scientology?

J: I think every one of them are.

L: What makes you think that?

J: Because the instant, whether you're a celebrity or anyone, you start screwing up, they start pulling out what you say in your files.

L: Do you think they've done this to any of the celebrities?

J: I think they've done it to every one of them.

L: What would make you believe that?

J: Because that's what they do to control people, it's part of the control mechanism. "Hey look, you think the reason you could be having trouble in auditing," and this is done in a very slick kind of fashion, "well, you're doing this this and this, and that's kind of immoral and wrong, isn't it? Oh, let's talk about this." Do you see what I mean.

L: So the reason you want to leave is because of all these things that you're doing in your life that aren't right, and that's why your auditing isn't working, which sends a signal to the celebrities that we know what you're doing is illegal..

J: We have it written up real nice, we even show it to you. You see these things, you see, that has impact which I've since come to know, especially from that damn deposition I was just in. It has impact.

L: Besides Travolta, has Kirstie Alley, or Mimi Rogers, or any of the other celebrities that you know of have any of them gone psychotic, or...

J: I know Priscilla Presley was on the edge. They were having her...

L: Did she ever want to leave Scientology, have nothing to do with it?

J: I think she's done it.

L: She's left it a couple of times, and they go and bring her back. Do you think they use well, you already answered that.

J: They use the bad points and they say, well, you're still having trouble, let us help you. What you are doing is bad, it's that whole thing of we're going to make you perfect, which is, we are going to use your imperfection to control you utterly, totally, completely.

L: So you think they're using what they know in the PC folders and tell them the reason that you're not happy with Scientology is because of these crimes and other activities over here, and we can help you fix that.

J: Right. And you need to do something about that anyway, because you could be in trouble. Do you know what I mean?

L: Do you think the celebrities know that Scientology might... if they turn against Scientology, do you think these celebrities know that their confessions would be used against them? Do you think that's...

J: I think they have a pretty good damn idea. Because celebrities know what happens to ex-members.

L: They do know?

J: Oh hell yes, the SP declares. Rundown of everything a person basically has said in his auditing or in confidence trying to get help now, it's probably published, this person is a sexual deviant, he's a this, he's a that, he's done this. Yes, they see that. They are told, don't mess with these people, you see how evil they are. They read these things, and they say, "Well hell, I've done this and I've done this too." I could see my name being on this piece of paper someday.

L: What's the next thing on there?

J: John and Diane Colletto, I've spoken extensively about it. [Reading] "Annie Broeker, CSed Annie Broeker had a psychotic breakdown during auditing. When last this staff member saw Annie Broeker she was being audited quite a bit, she remembers a lot of screaming, yelling coming." Annie Broeker, I just seen this woman tormented, tormented. First they broke up her marriage with Pat Broeker, made him out to be the complete villain, got rid of him. She stayed in the church; she goes from trying to stop

some of this madness that goes on by David Miscavige to being in complete submission to him. And then, the last I heard about here, they separated her second marriage, she married to another person..

L: They literally tell he to separate?

J: Yeah, he's got to go, he's no good.

L: They break up the marriage?

J: They break up the marriage, they did it two times.

L: They give her an order.

J: Yeah, they give her an order, and then last person. His name was Jim, what was his last name.. He was in musician's unit with David Miscavige's father, and he hated Ron Miscavige because he thought he was a little psycho, just like his son, and he never could get along. He married Annie Broeker and then they broke up the marriage. Declared him, threw him off, threw him away. Well, he disguised his voice and all of this other stuff and talked to her, because he knew the phone numbers. She blew, flew to Florida, Mark Yeager and Marty Rathburn were waiting for her in John Travolta's personal plane, they were there before her commercial flight landed, and they literally walked her right onto the airplane and back.

L: Why would they do that? What knowledge did she have that they were so...

J: She was with L. Ron Hubbard for the last 5, 6 years on a daily basis, as a servant. Washed and bathed him, cooked his food, took his dictation. Sent his orders from him to the different church organizations.

L: So she knows the real L. Ron Hubbard. She knows about the will, his death, the estate...

J: The drugs, the insanity, everything.

L: Do you know where she is now?

J: I believe she's still at Golden Era Productions.

L: Did they let her leave?

J: No, no, no. They hold her. If she left it would be devastating, and she's been trying to go. Oh, so then what they did....

[STOP AND RESUME]

L: OK, who's next on the list?

J: [Reading] "There is a study about miscarriages and birth deformities among female Scientology staff members, particularly in certain divisions of Scientology. This was done because even internally, they were alarmed at the number of babies being born deformed, with extremely low weight, and with a lot of difficulties." Well, the common practice for a woman in Scientology, in the Sea Organization who gets pregnant is being degraded for number one being pregnant. They're put under undue stress and they're told that they're going to still be demanded to perform their duties, just like they would if they were not pregnant. Very often these women don't...

[END OF SIDE OF TAPE]

...They are just known to have miscarriages and the women don't take care of themselves, there's no prenatal care whatsoever, I've never seen a woman have prenatal care.

L: No prenatal care?

J: No, none whatsoever. Never ever seen a pregnant person been allowed to have any prenatal care.

L: How many pregnant women have you seen at Scientology that you know, that you don't believe had any prenatal care?

J: A few, Kathy Rinder, Sue Price, this one that I was telling you about, Spanky Taylor – damn near lost her baby, it was born at 3 pounds. Cindy Schaffner, when she was pregnant. You don't go to a doctor, you don't do nothing.

L: Why no prenatal care?

J: Because, I don't think they want to spend the money. I think it's a financial issue. It's like the person is already doing a bad thing, why throw money at the bad is the thought.

L: Continue.

J: [Reading] "Don Larson was beaten." I didn't see this happen, but I know him. I don't doubt that he was beaten. [Reading] "Ron Miscavige OT 7, married to Loretta Miscavige, an auditor and nurse, suffers deep depression from behind closed doors. He seems happy and jovial, and the ideal Scientology care, but he suffers quite a bit from depression." I think this very much is the case. My first association with Ron Miscavige was after he had been involved in some kind of rape incident with a young woman. Some very serious Scientology resources went into containing the situation with his father.

L: What do you mean by serious.

J: Private investigators, lawyers, people talked to the press to make sure there was no story about it. A lot of money was exchanged, in getting his father through that. He was immediately brought to Gold with the mother, where they were saying they were having marriage problems. David Miscavige's idea was to end the marriage, because his mother didn't want to be in the Sea Org. She wanted nothing to do with it. He kind of convinced his father he should be in the Sea Org because he's getting into too much trouble out there. As his father decided to join the Sea Org, his mother didn't, he arranged for their divorce.

L: David Miscavige arranged his own parents' divorce?

J: Yes. And his mother, his own mother, from her lips, I heard her say he was like a little Nazi Hitler, he was like a little Satan. She was very disgusted with him. She went on ahead and gave the divorce, and kind of disappeared for a while. Ron Miscavige was very often depressed and fits of, he would just have fits and start screaming at the top of his lungs. He would go from way up there to like, "Oh, I can't do nothin', I feel bad, I'm sick, leave me alone, don't want anybody around." He was up and down like this, quite regularly. Like he was seriously unbalanced, which is like a little mirror into his little son.

L: When you said that money was thrown at people to quiet the story of David Miscavige's father rape, the rape that he performed on someone...

J: Right.

L: ...do you mean that cash was given to silence the rape victim, or to silence government people, or political investigators? What do you mean, what's your knowledge there?

J: My actual knowledge is nothing concrete. This is who I know who went to deal with the situation. David Miscavige himself, Marty Rathburn, Lyman Spurlock was there, about 5 different attorneys, Larry Heller being one of them, Shermans were involved with it. All went down when it happened, and they went with money, and the intention to make this go away.

L: Were there criminal charges?

J: Against Ron Miscavige?

L: Yes.

J: I believe there were, but somehow he got out of them.

L: So, the criminal charges were dropped when Scientology and its lawyers and its money came in? What county was this in?

J: I don't know?

L: What state? Do you remember where the rape occurred?

J: It was in Philly?

L: Philadelphia? So Ron Miscavige was charged with rape and all the charges disappeared?

J: Everything about it disappeared, the story, the information about it, it's just gone. I mean they stayed up there for about a week.

L: All of them, right? Who paid for this, did the church of Scientology pay for this?

J: Yes.

L: So, David Miscavige potentially could have written out \$30,000 \$40,000 \$50,000 \$100,000 maybe more during this week to change, to get his father off the rape charges?

J: Right. That's a certain fact, being that he brought outside people in there and they had to be paid. So you can at least say just to pay them, along with all the investigators and the attorneys was that.

L: And the PIs. What PIs do you know were involved?

J: Ingram was up there.

L: Ingram was up there. What would allow him to pay this money out of the church. What if this happened with...Was Ron a member of the Sea Org at this time? This was a public person, that David Miscavige was using the church assets to buy him off a rape charge?

J: Right.

L: Would that, could any other staff member in Scientology write checks out for public person who got in trouble?

J: That was the one and only time I've seen it happen.

L: You said Sherman Lenske, the two brothers there. What is the role of Sherman Lenske in Scientology?

J: They, as I recall them specifically, they would arrange to make sure, or get them advice to make sure that it was covered up, that L. Ron Hubbards' authority and control over all corporations was covered up during the time he was living. They also advised him on certain things to make LRH not do, and not say. That was also a big discrepancy and problem, that ended up with the brokers. His attorneys would limit LRH's control

more and more. The excuse was "We give you any kind of money you want, just shut up and take the money and let us run things." L. Ron Hubbard felt like he was just pushed out of the picture, not that he shouldn't have been, because he was pretty damn crazy, and I'm not justifying one way or the other, but that was the struggle with the brokers and L. Ron Hubbard. David Miscavige I believe, just forced L. Ron out of existence.

L: He was just taking control away from Hubbard a little piece at a time while he was alive?

J: Yeah, and L. Ron Hubbard saw it. I had to sec-check David Miscavige on this. L. Ron Hubbard asked me, "Please find out what is his intention, what is he doing by making it so I can't even send a dispatch or order anyone to do anything that I normally do."

L: L. Ron Hubbard believed that David Miscavige may be trying to take over control of Scientology?

J: Yes.

L: And he was worried about it?

J: Yes.

L: He sent you to..

J: ..investigate it.

L: To do a security check, and find out any overt and evil intentions...

J: ...activities that he had been doing.

L: When you sec checked Miscavige on that, did anything come up?

J: Yeah, he was in complete disagreement with L. Ron Hubbard, he was in complete disagreement with Pat Broeker as to what should happen and when it should happen. And he was sick of giving them money because he said they just wasted money.

L: So he was even thinking of cutting L. Ron Hubbard off from money?

J: Right.

L: Let's talk about Lenskes, the attorneys.

J: These are the attorneys that gave him all of the advice, and worked with Lyman Spurlock in order to set up the corporations and make them seem somewhat virgin and

dissociated from each other, which effectively moved L. Ron Hubbard completely out of the picture.

L: Do you believe the Lenskes attorney, Sherman and who else? What's her name?

J: I don't remember.

L: The Lenskes, this law firm, these two people. Do you think that they were aware that they were committing a fraud by hiding the real control of....

J: I think they knew it implicitly, there was no question.

L: Were you ever at a meeting where they said anything or did anything that implied that they knew L. Ron Hubbard controlled Scientology, and they were trying to create a...

J: Absolutely.

L: Can you...

J: I was there when both brothers were there, I've been there several time, 10 times, 15 times. They were regular. When the probate situation came up, they were the attorneys for that. They were doing all of the advising and stuff like that. I was privy to some of those meetings, which covered many subjects, as opposed to having people running in and out. At that point in time we were just allowed to stay there and listen to everything. Yes, they were very much aware of the destruction of the documents throughout the different Scientology corporations to show no L. Ron Hubbard control.

L: Did they ever direct that those documents be destroyed to hide from the government, from the IRS, from anyone who looked at Scientology's corporate structure?

J: Yes. They told David Miscavige in no uncertain terms, "None of these things, these advises, can be anywhere."

L: So, in essence, destroy this evidence. The attorneys did.

J: Right.

L: The Lenskes, were they aware of the actions of the private investigators.

J: Very much so.

L: Were you ever sitting in a room where any...

J: I'll tell you a specific thing that happened. Marty was bringing up something about something PIs were doing. I can't tell you the specifics, but I can tell you is this. Sherman leaned over to Dave and said, "Look, I don't want to have this kind of talk

around here. I don't know what your security is, I don't want to be a party to hearing this stuff. I know about it, but, not in a room full of people like this."

L: Marty was talking about illegal operations that private investigators were doing, and Lenske was sitting there and said...

J: "Woah, wait a minute, I don't want to be here."

L: Were you ever at another meeting, or any other meeting where the Lenskes maybe, a smaller group, where any illegal activities were discussed?

J: Similar situation. We would all be in a meeting about one thing, and then we would bring up investigations and who we were going to have do what, and they would excuse themselves. They didn't want people seeing them knowing about this stuff. They very much worked with David and Lyman, majorly those four, because David would then come in tell us what Sherman and his little brother, Dan, I think it was, would say, and we would act on that advice, based on the information they were given about investigations from like whatever.

L: Do you recall any of the comments that David Miscavige said that the Lenskes wanted to have happen?

J: Not specifically.

L: Do you believe that the attorneys, there has been theory that the attorneys control Miscavige, and Miscavige controls Scientology. Did you ever see anything to make you think that that real control of Scientology exists with the Hellers and the Lenskes and that they have enough on Miscavige to take Miscavige out and Miscavige...

J: Yeah, I think there's definitely that kind of relationship that exists there, but I think that their hands are so dirty and blood drips from all their hands that they protect each other.

L: So, they all go down together, and they all survive together?

J: Right.

L: What kind of money do you think these, the Hellers, and the Lenskes are taken out of Scientology every year?

J: Many millions.

L: Millions of dollars each year?

J: At least when I was there, I can't speak of what's been happening from 1990 to 1998. I know that during the time I was there, 1982 to 1987, millions.

L: Estimate how many millions might have went to the Lenske firm?

J: 7, 8...

L; 7,8 million. The Heller firm, Larry Heller?

J: I'm sure he made about 4 or 5 million.

L: Were they performing lawsuit duties, or was this...

J: No, they were just acting as counsel. They had other little attorneys, they would discuss it with Dave, Norman, sometimes. Norman is just not that bright, he just doesn't get it. It would majorly be the CPA, Lyman Spurlock.

L: Do you think that they were being paid for work, or being paid to just have their piece of Scientology because they had been involved in some of these activities and everybody has to have their piece of the pie?

J: It seemed like to me, they had a definite piece of the pie. There were just so many attorneys in Scientology, all these juniors. Earl Cooley never held the position like Heller and the Lenske brothers, he never rose to that, never, never, never. These were L Ron Hubbard's personal attorneys. How useful they are today, I don't know. They have probably been retired to a greater or lesser degree because there is only so much of that people want.

L: Let's talk about the L. Ron Hubbard estate. Are you aware of any fraud in the probate or in the getting the Hubbard to sign any kind of coercion on any Hubbard family member to sign away their rights to the estate, any threats, any intimidation?

J: Don't ask me too much at once. What I know about the probate case is that L. Ron Hubbard, it was being demanded that L. Ron Hubbard appear on his own behalf. I know for a fact that everyone, including myself, knew exactly where he was at all times. The court was being lied to say "We didn't know where he was." They could have produced him at any time.

L: All the Scientology officials that were swearing out affidavits were committing perjury? Were the lawyers aware that they knew where Scientology was?

J: Yes.

L: So the lawyers, who were the lawyers, Heller, Lenske, these lawyers were lying to the probate court, having full knowledge that everybody knew where L. Ron Hubbard was:

J: Right.

L: So they committed the fraud to keep L. Ron Hubbard from appearing?

J: Yeah. And, you got to dig this point. The reason being is because David Miscavige and the Lenske brother didn't think he could stand up to it. They didn't think he was stable enough, they thought he was a little fucking crazy. I got this straight from David Miscavige.

L: David Miscavige said that he believed L. Ron Hubbard was crazy?

J: Yeah, couldn't get up to this, and it'd be a mess.

L: That he was not functionally aware enough, or mentally capable enough?

J: Right, mentally capable of getting through appearing in court.

L: So, Miscavige, you heard this. Was anyone else in the room when you heard this. He said to this to me private. He said, "Jesse, listen, you've got to grow up, you've got to know something, OK? L. Ron Hubbard's not ready for this." He looked me right in the eye. He said, "No, we don't want this happening." Because I asked him. This is during the time when he and I were kind of like buddies. We'd go out and exercise together, play racket ball and stuff, and he started opening up to me a little bit.

L: And he said he wasn't read for it because..

J: He wasn't mentally stable. He said, "There's just some things about L. Ron Hubbard you don't know."

L: This was in when, what year?

J: 1985, could be '86.

L: Other things that could be fraud, that you might interpret as fraud in the Hubbard estate?

J: I know that a big battle was going on at that time between David Miscavige and L. Ron Hubbard, because L. Ron Hubbard thought his hands were totally tied. He was trying to go to other people besides David Miscavige to try to help him continue to have control over the church.

L: That's when he went to you to do the sec check. After Hubbard got the results of the sec check, did you report to L. Ron Hubbard that David Miscavige disagrees...

J: I reported to Pat Broeker.

L: Did Pat Broeker get that to L. Ron Hubbard?

J: What he did with it, I don't know, because I never heard that.

L: You never heard if Ron got mad?

J: No, never heard anything about Ron, never even got a thank you, which was unusual. Normally when I did things for him I'd get a response. Or I'd get a gift, a leather coat, a ring, or something.

L: You'd think that if you had just given him the information that David Miscavige may be trying to take over the church and cut off his cash, that Hubbard, generally was known as having an incredible temper...

J: He was having that temper.

L: ...would respond in some way. Did you think it was odd that there was no response whatsoever?

J: Yeah.

L: Do you have any idea what could have happened?

J: Yeah, he never got the message, or you know, and I just have a theory that I heard, by that time that he was pretty far gone, and couldn't hold a train of thought anyway.

L: Who else told you Hubbard was pretty far gone and couldn't hold a train of thought?

J: Rick Aznaran.

L: How would he know that?

J: Because he was there, and the hired farm hands that they had said that -- Rick Aznaran related this story to me -- that often they would hear L. Ron Hubbard screaming at BTs late in the night. He was heavily medicated with drugs from Dr. Denk like valium, the this the that, and the other thing.

L: Tranquilizers?

J: Tranquilizers, and then he's experimenting with drugs, he's getting any kind of drug he wants to from Denk.

L: Any possibility of anti-psychotics?

J: Yeah, I do believe he had some of those too. Rick said there was a cabinet full of all kind of prescription medicine that you could ever imagine when they went to where he was an opened his medicine drawer. He said that amazed him because it's a strict policy of Scientology not to take any drugs whatsoever, any kind of medical drugs whatsoever.

You just don't take them. And here he had a zillion of them. I've also since talked to Dennis Erlich who told me about a person who used to deliver cocaine and marijuana to L. Ron Hubbard, as well as LSD and other things, and knew him just in passing because Dennis was having an association with him or something. They were at some concert together, because Dennis does concerts. They got to talking, Dennis mentioned that he'd been in Scientology, and this person said to him, "Oh, I know L. Ron Hubbard, I used to bring him his drugs up there in Creston where he was."

L: Anyone else, at this point in 1985 that you can recall said to you, that had experience with L. Ron Hubbard, that he was not mentally sound or coherent, or competent?

J: Pat Broeker kind of gave me that idea.

L: What did he say that made you believe that?

J: He just said, this is just after we did that sect check. He said, "Well, I think you did a good job. The old man has a lot on his mind, and we're just trying to keep stuff off his lines." Which is Scientology jargon, which simply means that he is a little bit tied up and what he doesn't know won't hurt him.

L: Did you hear anybody else besides David Miscavige and Rick Aznaran, Pat Broeker, imply to you that in 1985 L. Ron Hubbard was mentally incompetent?

J: Vicky mentioned to me that she had gotten word prior to him dying that he was sick. She didn't know how it was, she just told me she had talked to Annie, who said he wasn't doing well. That's the beginning and the end of it.

L: Continue with....

J: Now after he passed, I was there, when Mary Sue Hubbard was made to sign an agreement, I do believe it was \$100,000 to relinquish any kind of claim on the copyrights, or trademarks, or bank accounts, or anything to do with the Scientology fortune. I was part of like a 12 or 17 man team of people that just invaded her house, and was all a pretty cordial affair. She didn't want to sign the damn thing. Lawyers were there, David Miscavige started screaming, "You are going to sign it!"

L: He was screaming at her, "You're going to sign this document"?

J: We were all there, browbeating her

L: 12 to 17 people?

J: Yeah, all in Sea Org uniforms. All in cars everywhere, just going in there and overwhelming this poor little old lady.

L: Would you say that you were an intimidating presence?

J: Beyond any question.

L: Would you say that Mary Sue Hubbard was coerced into signing an agreement?

J: It's beyond any question. As well as Arthur, I was there when he signed it too. He got \$50,000.

L: He got \$50,000. Did they have their own lawyers there who looked at the documents?

J: No, no. They had no representation. All the Scientology lawyers were there, and they would just sit down, this is what they lawyers say, sign here.

L: Were they allowed to read the documents?

J: Yeah, but I don't think they knew what they were reading.

L: So the Scientology lawyers were there, did they act like they were representing Mary Sue Hubbard or Arthur in advising them in any legal way at all on the document?

J: No.

L: What lawyers were there?

J: I believe Larry Heller.

L: Anyone else?

J: Not that I specifically recall, but that doesn't mean that no one was there.

L: So, Larry Heller was there in this incredibly coercive environment. Were these men, these 12 to 17 people in Sea Org uniforms?

J: All men, except Vicky Aznaran.

L: Were they big men?

J: Big men. Lyman, Norman, Marty, me.

L: Was there any kind of spoken or unspoken threat that if she didn't sign this document there would be trouble for her or her family?

J: Trouble for her, yes.

L: What was said?

J: Going to get sec checked, going to get auditing, going to get this, ethics, whatever. She blew up, she said, "No, I'm going to sec check you to find out what the hell you're trying to do to me."

L: So she was threatened with a security check, and ethics, which meant that she would have to work through conditions and do all kinds of menial, manual labor?

J: No, just have someone sitting with her in her house. She wasn't very functional. She had a couple of Scientologists who watched her every move and reported to David Miscavige every day about her.

L: They lived in her house?

J: They lived in her house and reported on her every single day.

L: They were writing reports on her condition?

J: Every single day.

L: Was she sickly?

J: Very sickly, fragile woman.

L: Was she on medication?

J: No, I do not believe that was allowed.

L: So, she was sick, she had Scientology people spying on her before these 12 to 17 people came...

J: During and after. It was all set up. They told what she did every moment of the day. "We took her to the mall today, she bought this today." Neville [?] was reporting to David Miscavige every day.

L: Personally?

J: Personally.

L: Were they worried that Mary Sue Hubbard would...What were they worried about?

J: That she wouldn't sign exactly what they wanted her to sign.

L: So, she had no choice?

J: None.

L: 12 to 17 large men in uniforms standing around her ..

J: ..telling her she's got to do it.

L: Other people were telling her to sign it?

J: The people were telling her to sign it was Norman Starkey, David Miscavige, the attorney just handing it to her telling her this is the release form, or whatever. I never said a word when I was there, Vicky never said a word, I don't think Marty spoke to her.

L: Why were 12 to 17 people in uniform necessary?

J: Because David Miscavige said we need to go in there. Mark Yeager was there. David Miscavige said we need to go in there and show a unified group of people from the church that we're running things and it's got nothing to do with her and she is not entitled to anything.

L: Did he say that?

J: Yes. I'm paraphrasing pretty much what he said. David Miscavige said she is lucky to get what she's getting. Ray Mithoff was there.

L: Was he going to convince her that she wasn't entitled to anything?

J: Yeah. And, I'll tell you the moment when she actually relinquished and signed the document, they pulled out their ace in the hole. She was actually kind of sad that he died, because they had been separated and hadn't talked for a long time. Actually, they hadn't be en talking that much since she had gotten out of jail. She asked Ray Mithoff with tears in his eyes if he had said anything, or asked about her before he passed. He said no, he didn't mention your name. At which point after the meeting he reported with glee how he know that had really got to her, just to know that she's a piece of shit that he never said anything. At that she bowed her head and they just stuck the papers underneath, like this, and she started signing.

L: She had no representation. How much time was she given to think and read, and think about whether she wanted to sign and waive her whole inheritance, her children's inheritance.

J: A couple hours.

L: Alone, she was left alone?

J: No, never alone. We stayed there for 2 hours.

L: For 2 hours you, David Miscavige..

J: Norman Starkey...

L: ...just kept talking at her, they screamed...

J: They screamed.

L: Loud?

J: You could hear it outside with the door closed.

L: Screaming at her to sign this document.

J: And telling her we're going to sec check you, and you're out of ethics and all of this.

L: They threatened her with all these punishments in Scientology?

J: Right.

L: And the lawyer sat there and watched this.

J: Right.

L: Arthur went through the same thing?

J: He was much more submissive because he had been gotten to earlier. He escaped, ran away from the church, went to Hawaii. They had PIs track him down. He just wanted to be away.

L: What do you mean, gotten to earlier?

J: Like I say, he wanted nothing to do with Scientology any more, nothing to do with the Sea Org. He just wanted to be a normal person. He escaped, dyed his hair black, assumed names, all this stuff. Ended up in Hawaii, just kicking around, having a good time. They found him, escorted him back.

L: They sent PIs or someone out to find him?

J: PIs different church members, and brought him to me.

L: Physically?

J: Physically, brought him to me.

L: Was it with his approval, or was he kidnapped from Hawaii?

J: I think his brain was scattered because they had coerced him all along the way, and now this was his thing.

L: So they brought him to you, why?

J: To audit.

L: To audit. Why do you think he was gotten to sign this thing earlier before Mary Sue, what made you think he was going to go along?

J: Because I think his sister, his two sisters signed it willingly signed it. They were probably were used to coerce him to sign it. Diana and Suzette, who were still both in the Sea Org.

L: How much did Diana and Suzette get?

J: I think they got \$50,000.

L: \$50,000. Were they, did they have attorneys that represented them?

J: Like I say, at no point did I ever see them having any attorneys.

L; They had no legal counsel?

J: No. Intimidation.

L: This is for Arthur and Mary Sue. What do you think, do you think that Suzette and Diana had attorneys?

J: I can only speculate on that, Lawrence, and I think the answer is no. The other two didn't, what the hell makes them special?

L: Do you think anybody said to them that because they were the family and the heirs that they had complete rights to all these assets?

J: No. Quite to the contrary. I'll tell you what they were told by David Miscavige because I heard these words come out of his mouth: "Everything that L. Ron Hubbard did, he did for the church. We are the church, not you. Therefore everything is staying right here with us." That's the way it went.

L: Did the lawyer ever say anything to them about...

J: Silent.

L: Never said anything about a state law or anything like that?

J: No.

L: They did everything... Did David ever, or Starkey ever.

J: No, you've got to me, because this gets frustrating. I told you exactly what happened. Raymond up and dropped the bomb on her that he didn't care about her, she hung her head and just started signing whatever they stuck under her hand.

L: Trust me on these questions, there's a reason for them. We'll talk about it when we're done. Did anyone tell her that the law said that... did anyone imply that the law was not on her side?

J: No.

L: So they just simply said, we own this because Hubbard did it for us, sign the document, with 12 to 17 men in uniform standing around her an intimidating presence, screaming at her.

J: No, everybody wasn't....

L: Just Miscavige.

J: Norman and Miscavige. He introduced us, he said, these are the people in RTC, they do this, they're running things, not you, not the family. Here's international management, Mark Yeager, he's running things not you. Here's all the services, you're not part of this.

L: Do you think the Hubbard family had any idea that his assets were worth from \$100 to \$400 million?

J: No.

L: Do you think that them receiving \$50,000 each and Mary Sue receiving \$100,000 for the estate of L. Ron Hubbard, do you think they would have done that if they had legal counsel, had there not been people standing in their room 12-17 men, women, in uniform, and being screamed at? Do you think they would have done that after careful selection?

J: I'll say this, the answer is obvious. David Miscavige had a smile on his face for nearly a week after he pulled that off. I mean he was happy, happy, happy.

L: He just made \$400,000,000.

J: Or more. I think it's a lot more than that. Can we take a break?

[BREAK]

L: Let's go back to fraud in the Hubbard estate. Anything else you know about any of the asset transfers, anything having to do with how the Hubbard family was manipulated maybe prior to them being given these ridiculous documents to sign, that signed away hundreds of millions of dollars of their inheritance?

J: This is another incident that I was directly involved in. This was like a couple of weeks after I was brought up to the Hemet location, which I didn't want to go to in the first place. There had been a situation where Diana Hubbard wanted nothing else to do with the church. She had married some record producer guy, his name was John Ryan. He was interested in her as an artist, and she just wanted to dissociate herself from Scientology. Well, she effectively did so, and she was extremely non-cooperative. Now this was a nightmare for David Miscavige and I guess L. Ron Hubbard. Because L. Ron Hubbard was concerned with Roe Ann, Diana's daughter, not being within the confines of the church. For a long time after Diana's decision to leave the church, and which she did, you know where used to have that penthouse at Flag, on the second floor, she just abandoned that, ran away, married this other guy. L. Ron Hubbard had sent down orders to get her to turn over custody of Roe Ann to John Hallwitch, her former husband and father of the child, who was still in Scientology in the Sea Org. He came from quite a wealthy family himself. It was my job to go there and make her sign over legal custody of the child. I was given mission orders by Miscavige and Starkey, who talked to me extensively about things that had been done, and what was she was doing. David Miscavige mentioned that she was in the Mile High Club, giving people blow jobs on the airplanes, and this and that and the other thing. Screwing this one and screwing that one, and just kind of out in life trying to be a normal person is how I see it at this point. I was to go there, she could do that, but I was to do that and get her to sign over custody of her child to her former husband, which I did do.

L: She actually signed over custody of her child?

J: Yes.

L: What did you say or do to make a mother give up her child to an organization she wants nothing to do with?

J: I told her just basically spoke to her about the goodness of Scientology and the Sea Org and all of the things it was trying to do. That she had chosen another path, and it was obvious that she was going to do that, but to please let Roe Ann grow up in an environment where people would look after her and she would be perfectly taken care of. Of which she was. She was like a child prodigy; she lived like a princess in the making. For some reason or another, there was literally no resistance. She just said OK and signed it. I was there all of 45 minutes. By the time I finished my spiel, she had her damn pen in her hand.

L: You never had to say anything negative, no threats, no nothing?

J: No sect checks, no I'm going to do this, I'm going to do that. She just did it. She was tired of fighting, she was pale. I was the last person in the line of many. Vicky Aznaran went there and screamed at her, had a fit, totally screwed the whole thing up. David Miscavige went there, screaming at her, telling her how horrible she was.

L: So, people had already taken her through the baiting, they had already wore her down.

J: Months earlier.

L: How many missions went there to try to get her kid from her.

J: Two.

L: David Miscavige and Vicky Aznaran, and you know for a fact they screamed at her?

J: And failed miserably, and she just got worse.

L: Did they threaten her?

J: I'm sure they did, but I wasn't privy to that. I just know how they act, the kind of people they are.

L: When you came there she was pale?

J: Kind of listless, kind of. She had been in a giving up position, like I just give the hell up. I just spoke to her, I said, these are my views on it, you know why I'm here. This is why we're doing it. By the time I got out my spiel she said, OK, where do I sign. No representation, no attorney, nothing.

L: Signed over her...

J: Her only child.

L: ...without an attorney. Did you take the child with you?

J: The child was already in the custody of the church, this was just a legal matter.

L: How could the child be in the custody of the church if the mother...

J: The child was in Hemet California, and the mother was in Florida at the Flag. How that happened I don't know, but that was the existing situation when I came into it. It was just a legal wrap-up that they were trying to do.

L: Anything else that you know that happened to the Hubbard family prior that might have set up a situation before they signed their inheritance away? Anything that might have affected that? Did the church run any covert operations on them?

J: Beyond what I told you about Art with the Hawaii trip, they were the only children that I was somewhat close to, Arthur, Diana, and Mary Sue. Those were the ones that I had affiliation with.

L: Anything else relating to the probate or the estate where you saw anything that was fraudulent or anything that didn't look right to you in the way that it was transferred or handled?

J: Beyond what I told you, I don't know what else more wrong could happen.

L: Let me ask you then, you mentioned that David Miscavige said that L. Ron Hubbard wasn't competent and they couldn't let him get on the stand, and he just wasn't well enough. Did L. Ron Hubbard get better after those times, did he get healthier? Did he get stronger?

J: Never saw it, never had any indication. In fact, I think he got worse.

L: He got worse. He was incompetent before, now, they say that L. Ron Hubbard signed a will on the day before he died, yet Miscavige say Hubbard was incompetent.

J: Another thing in my mind now. Norman Starkey knows how to perfectly forge L. Ron Hubbard's signature.

L: Norman Starke knows how to perfectly forge... How do you know?

J: And so does David Miscavige because he showed me. He wrote his signature. David Miscavige wrote his signature. David Miscavige could write his signature perfectly.

L: They actually could do a perfect forgery of L. Ron Hubbard's signature?

J: Yeah.

L: Do you know that they ever did forge L. Ron Hubbard's signature?

J: He was showing me that he could, David Miscavige did mention to me that he had done it before.

L: He had forged L. Ron Hubbard's signature. I guess what I'm asking, I'm hearing...

J: This was right around, or shortly after the probate thing, because... Now you're reminding me of something. Let me talk. You are reminding me of a time when L. Ron Hubbard was supposed to sign something, I mentioned this in my declaration that David Miscavige was the person that could do the seals, the... what is it?

L: Notary.

J: Notary public, a notary public. He took all of that stuff. What he was showing me, telling me that if he had to go off to some place to get LRH to sign something was when he was telling me that he could write LRH's signature, and showed me he could do it.

L: They claim that L. Ron Hubbard wrote a will the night before he died, changing all of his beneficiaries, changing his estate, and yet...

J: I don't believe it. Lenskes got together and did that, and I believe that if anything needed to be signed, David Miscavige signed it.

L: OK. Let's assume that didn't happen. You're getting these reports that L. Ron Hubbard is not competent, that he's mentally not well, and he's taking all these drugs. Do you think, let's just conjecture, I'm wondering how a man David Miscavige says is not competent can sign a will when he's not competent.

J: This is why it's my belief that he never signed a will. Either Norman Starkey, and I don't think Norman did it because he'd had to then sign his own name as an executor of the estate, which he was. I think probably David Miscavige signed it, because he could do it perfectly. I saw it with my own eyes. I saw him write L. Ron Hubbard's signature, and you know this other thing. They would even brag about it, you know, they would sell these copies of books that had LRH's signature on it. Norman was writing that. They would laugh about it. Tell these people, you're buying this book L. Ron Hubbard signed it, and it was Norman and them signing them.

L: You mean the books.

J: The Battlefield Earth books.

L: for like \$2,000 or \$3,000 or \$5,000 for hand signed copies.

J: LRH did not sign them.

L: That was a fraud?

J: Fraud.

L: It was an art fraud in a sense, for hundreds of thousands of dollars of art fraud on people who thought they were buying original copies...

J: Yeah, because so many people wanted to buy it, and I was sitting in the office with David and Norman, it's like there ain't no way in hell LRH's going to sign this shit, we'll sign it. The comment was, "We'll never get him to sign this."

L: Dr. Denk, at the time of L. Ron Hubbard's death, was L. Ron Hubbard's physician. Dr. Denk was the one bringing up all these prescriptions and giving him the medication.

J: And doing "research" with L. Ron Hubbard. They would discuss different types of drugs, what the drugs would do. Gene Denk would get the drugs, let him do what he wanted. He was the guinea pig, L. Ron Hubbard was the guinea pig.

L: He was making himself his own guinea pig?

J: Right.

L: For drug therapy?

J: Right.

L: For the man who doesn't allow drugs for any members of the church of Scientology. Did Denk keep, do you know if he kept medical records on L. Ron Hubbard's condition?

J: If he did I never saw them.

L: Would Denk know if L. Ron Hubbard was competent?

J: He would know, whether or not he would say is another thing, because he was in the deep pockets. Like I say, a trip was financed for him to go to Vegas, he was given money to go gamble.

L: The church of Scientology gave the doctor of L. Ron Hubbard...

J: Money to go gamble in Vegas, immediately after he passed.

L: Immediately after he left.

J: After he was dead, I'm talking about now he's dead, now they do whatever they do. Now he's up in Vegas gambling.

L: The personal physician of this guy. How long was Denk Hubbard's personal physician?

J: For as long as I knew, starting from '82.

L: From '82 to '87. Did he have other patients, or was he just dedicated to L. Ron Hubbard? Was this his person physician?

J: I think he had other patients, other Scientology patients.

L: Would you say that L. Ron Hubbard may have been his most important patient?

J: That would be speculation on my part, but I think he was his most rich and influential patient.

L: So, his patient dies, changes wills on the night before he dies.

J: He goes to Vegas to gamble.

L: And he goes to money to gamble on money given to him by the church?

J: Right.

L: Do you have any idea how much money?

J: I think maybe \$10,000.

L: \$10,000 was given to Dink to go to gamble in Las Vegas.

J: Mike Eldridge related that story to me, and Rick Aznaran.

L: What was their position at the time?

J: Well, Mike Eldridge went up there after he was already dead, but the body was still at the property, so did Rick Aznaran. Denk was there. They went to another property in Vegas after the death. They sent Denk and some other people there, away from that scene, and Denk went to gamble and Rick and I believe it was Mike stayed at the Las Vegas property, just kind of watching over Denk.

L: Why would they watch over Denk? What would they be worried about? Why would you watch over the physician?

J: I don't know, but they were like entertaining him. It's all secret, secret cars, secret locations, tailing him, the elaborateness they would go through to keep these things secret.

L: But L. Ron Hubbard's dead, why would you worry about the physician's doing?

J: I have no idea.

L: Is Denk still in the church now?

J: I have no idea.

L: Anything else? Do you know of anyone who was there when Hubbard died, physically died? Have you heard anyone talk who may have been a witness to his death?

J: Ray Mithoff.

L: Ray Mithoff was there. Anyone else?

J: David Miscavige.

L: David Miscavige was there when he died

J: Norman Starkey, Pat Broeker, Annie Broeker, Sarge and Pooh.

L: Sarge and Pooh, you don't know their last names?

J: Those were the ones that were there, and some hired people, some hired hands I guess.

L: Were there any attorneys there?

J: I can't say.

L: You never heard if any attorneys were there.

J: What I will tell you when, let me speak, just before he died, it was like his death was known. Certain people disappeared already, before it was announced he was dead. Ray Mithoff disappeared, David Miscavige disappeared, Norman Starkey disappeared, for at least 3 or 4 days prior to L. Ron Hubbard being dead. Because we were wondering where the hell they were. Vicky and I were wondering, where are these people. Suddenly Ray is woken up in the middle of the night, he's given a brand new vehicle, a Bronco, a Ford Bronco and told to go there, and no one can know what he's doing. The next thing you know, when he comes back, L. Ron Hubbard's dead. So there was a 3 or 4 day period prior to L. Ron Hubbard being dead where certain people that disappeared and the later story was that they were there when it happened.

L: Is it possible that Hubbard had died and they went after he died? Is there anything that would make you think that from anything you've ever seen or heard inside Scientology?

J: Anything is possible.

L: I'm asking whether you saw or heard anything that would make one believe that Hubbard may have been dead when they woke up Mithoff and everybody went there after he died.

J: I can speculate that, but Ray Mithoff said he was auditing him when he went there. Who knows what happened, I don't have any... No one said to me, or no one ever gave me the idea that he had already been dead.

L: Have you heard anything about when he signed his will? Have you heard anybody discuss the time when he changed his will? Nothing at all. Let's keep going with our list.

J: OK. [Reading] "Spanky Pena, specifically mentioned that when she was on the RPF she had a 3 pound baby. She had to rush to the hospital, the medical office said to tell the hospital that she was indignant so that Scientology wouldn't have to pay the bill. Indigent! So that Scientology would not have to pay the bill. This was a Medicare fraud case." I know that Spanky was on RPF, I know she had it very difficult, I know the way she was treated. The thing with Medicare, I can only believe my own personal story, as far as being there and having that firsthand knowledge, no. [Pause] The guy that was run over by the truck riding his bicycle.

L: Was that Shaffner?

J: Yeah, Bob Schaffner, we already talked about that.

L: Let me ask you a question did you ever hear of any other accidents involving staff members or people in Scientology.

J: Yes, Kevin cut his damn fingers off, only had 3 fingers left. Kevin True.

L: Kevin True. Was this related...

J: Had to be flown by helicopter out. He was in RTC.

L: Could this have been related to..

J: He was doing ethics and was doing conditions and he was doing amends.

L: No sleep...

Tape 4, August 25, 1998 (Continued from Tape 3)

Lawrence Wollersheim and Jesse Prince

L: You mentioned Kevin True had fingers cut off.

J: Yeah, he was doing something, he was actually making something for me when he had his accident, for my dog. I said, well I'd like something heavy for my dog to pick up and play with, like a wooden barbell. No, he suggested, I'll make you a wooden barbell for mens, something he'd dig. I said, OK, whatever.

L: Do you have any knowledge of Scientology falsifying accident reports of people who are hurt in the organization, and falsifying those records. Workman's Compensation and the government require that if certain accident reports that occur, there are reports filed.

J: Yes, I remember now, you're making me. It was standard practice to not go on Workman's Compensation, no matter what you did. It's kind of like if you had an

accident, no Workman's Comp, we don't want them involved. It was a bad thing to get Workman's Comp. I actually injured my knee working, when they had me working in the field. I couldn't do anything through Workman's Comp. They just sent me to the chiropractor a couple of times and said that was pretty much it, you'll be audited.

L: No one was allowed, if you filed a report with Workman's Compensation, what would happen to you in the church?

J: You wouldn't do it, it's just not something that happened. You were told not to do it.

L: You were literally told, "If you're injured, you do not report this."

J: Right.

L: Did Scientology have insurance for staff members that paid?

J: Apparently not.

L: Any kind of insurance that you knew of?

J: I never had any.

L: Medical?

J: No.

L: Health?

J: No.

L: No type of insurance.

J: None whatsoever.

L: Did they insure their buildings? Against fire?

J: Not that I know of, I've never seen it. I know as a director, I never had any building insured.

L: Never was any insurance on any of the properties?

J: No.

L: Let's go on with the list here.

J: This is a list that says here, "The following people he personally knows have had psychotic episodes while on auditing. Some of the people on the following list are still in the Sea Organization." Two people are Stephanie and Chris Silcock. I know that Chris Silcock was John Travolta's auditor for quite a while. He wanted to leave the Sea Organization. He was put through complete misery. He was there at the same time I was there with my ex-wife trying to leave. They ordered a divorce between he and his wife. They have been married for 27 years, had a kid together. I know he went pretty crazy. But, he kept in his mind he was leaving. I do believe he actually left.

L: Would you say he went neurotic or psychotic?

J: Yes, completely.

L: Psychotic?

J: Well, more neurotic.

L: We finished the list of all the people on our list. Is there anyone that you knew, or heard of that attempted suicide while in Scientology that wasn't on our list? Or sent psychotic?

J: Jan, there was a girl named Jan, and Andre can tell you this story better than me. I forget her last name, but we were on the 7th floor of the complex, this back in '79. That woman sat on the damn window ledge, leaning out like this, crying her eyes out, and was about to jump. Andre Taboyoyan even talked her off the ledge.

L: Why was she going to jump?

J: She was just depressed.

L: Did you ever hear anything about whether it was related to auditing?

J: It was related to being in Scientology, can't get out. We were incarcerated, we couldn't leave.

L: She was locked at the time?

J: We were in RPF, yes.

L: That's what I didn't know. You were under lockdown, and she wanted to leave, and she was about to kill herself because they wouldn't let her leave?

J: Right. Andre talked her off the ledge, at which point she was confined to the first floor. A person named Janet Dare and Cheryl Herzer, Cheryl Sutter, or whatever her name is now, watched her for weeks. Then she was taken out of the Sea Org.

L: They took her out of the seventh floor to the first floor because they didn't want her jumping.

J: And then locked her up for real in a room under armed guard.

L: Locked her up... when you say armed guard, you mean...

J: Not armed guard, a guard.

L: Do you know anyone else who attempted, or actually committed suicide, or you heard may have committed suicide, or went psychotic?

J: Beyond those ones that I've mentioned that I know, I don't there's nothing else that comes to mind.

L: Do you have any knowledge of people on the L's or OT III?

J: Wait a minute, Ed Brewer.

L: Ed Brewer.

J: What I heard about Ed Brewer was he was out ethics, and he was with some car accidents and bled to death. It was a problem that he bled death. They didn't believe he bled to death or something. I know it came up as a big problem when Ed Brewer died. It's really bad that he died, the guy bled to death, he was in a car, people walked away from him. I remember hearing this story, the Ed Brewer story. I remember hearing Marty talk about it.

L: Was Scientology somehow involved, or somehow negligent?

J: Somehow they were, both. They were involved by watching him or something, and then some kind of negligence happened where he didn't get some kind of medical assistance. They were talking about him like this was a big fucked thing and we gotta do something about this.

L: So, there was some problem with his death?

J: Right.

L: If you remember anything in more detail...

J: What I remember was he was left to die.

L: He was left to die.

J: And he was not in the good graces of the church, no one was willing to help him. He was kind of like fair gamed or something.

L: And he bled to death because no one would help him.

J: Yeah. And they were like, it's good for him the fucking prick, this kind of thing.

L: They actually said that?

J: Yeah.

L: Marty Rathburn?

J: Yeah.

L: That that's what happens to people who...

J: Yeah, go out ethics against the church, that's what happens. The SOB, he bled to death.

L: Was he a staff member?

J: Ed Brewer, I do believe he was. I didn't know him personally; I didn't come to know him until after his death, who and what he was. Then, also, Dennis Erlich was a good friend of mine, and was during the time of the church, when I was still in the church and he was outside of the church, picketing the church. He asked me something about Ed Brewer, and I told it pretty much what I told you right now.

L: OK. On the upper levels, introspection rundown, the ELS, the OTCs, OT III, have you ever seen or heard of anyone going psychotic, or it was such a...

J: Yes, European people, but I couldn't tell your names. People that just went berserk. Women, I've seen a couple of women.

L: When you say berserk, can you give us some for.

J: I mean like no longer even doing anything that resembles what everyone else is doing around them.

L: Screaming?

J: Screaming, talking out of their head. Speaking, you can't understand them. Throwing things around. Moving erratically.

L: When that would happen, what would they do?

J: Lock the person up.

L: They would lock them up, and occurred during the upper secret levels, something that happened during that time. Let me ask you about finances, money, bank accounts, money being transferred out of the country. You mentioned something about Cyprus yesterday.

J: You want me to talk about that, you've got to let me tell the story, and then after I tell it, ask me questions.

L: I'm going to listen to your stories, and I'll trade you more later.

J: OK. There was a point in time when they were buying that Freewinds ship, and this was prior to the IRS tax exempt status. Well they were systematically emptying all of the bank accounts outside of the US and lowering them to a real low level. Someone had gone to Cyprus, and I forget who the hell it was, it may have even been Norman. Some people went to Switzerland, some people went to Cyprus. They did a research to find out where was the least place the United States government could have an effect on a country, in relationship to its money. And they picked Cyprus and they poured a bunch of money into it.

L: They drained US accounts?

J: Drained US accounts, in other countries, and moved it to Cyprus.

L: How much are we talking about, any estimates?

J: Hundreds of millions of dollars.

L: Hundreds of millions of dollars taken out of the US?

J: Right.

L: Was it taken out according to the law, where anything over \$10,000 is transferred, you notify the government?

J: I don't know how they did it, I just know that they did it. Then what was mixed in with that was this IAS, it just sprung a whole new reason to get money from people. So they mixed the monies together, money that they raised for the IAS, and the money that they had already put in there. They mixed those monies together, to make it seem like it was all brand new IAS money.

L: To hide the fact that they had taken it from other organizations all over the world?

J: Right.

L: What year was this?

J: '84, '83 – '84.

L: Just to give you some background, the judge in my case ordered them not to transfer assets. They claimed they only had \$16 million worth of assets in the church of Scientology in California. We claimed they stripped out \$500 million and moved it out of the country.

J: Yeah.

L: They claimed it was bullshit. Were you ever aware of anyone ever saying we need to move the country because of the Wollersheim lawsuit and get all of the assets out of the church of Scientology in California?

J: Yes, Marty saying that, Marty saying that by the time Wollersheim gets ready to collect, the CSC is just going to be a shell corporation, there will be nothing there.

L: So, they knew what they were doing.

J: Oh, absolutely.

L: They deliberately stripped the assets from...

J: from CSC.

L: ...hundreds of millions of dollars. What do you think that CSC might have been worth in 1980, 1979?

J: You have to take a look at this. There was no CSI, there was CSC.

L: CSC was everything.

J: It was everything, so everything they had was there. When I arrived, the figures that we used to count in 1982, as far as Sea Org reserves, just that one Sea Org reserve account, was in excess of \$200 million.

L: Just one account in the church of Scientology of California, the Sea Org was in excess of \$200 million?

J: Right.

L: What other accounts were there that you knew of?

J: The RTC account, there was \$18 million there.

L: \$18 million in the RTC account. How much do you think Scientology was worth in '82, '83? Did you ever see any figures on how much it was worth?

J: Without the services it was in excess of \$500 million.

L: \$500 million, that's what they talked internally? Who threw that?

J: Dave Miscavige, Lyman, Norman Starkey.

L: All said the church was worth \$500 million.

J: But they also had other investments that were turning as well. They had investments as well.

L: Tell me about these investments.

J: I can't, because that's all I know. I was just told that there were also investments. You see, this was not money that they would openly. Just getting them to talk about money at all was like pulling elephant tusk with a pair of pliers. It's not like they run around bragging about it. I was questioning, and I just realized I was on dangerous, you know, like, "Why you asking, why the hell you asking, what, what." I just got off of it, I got off of it to the point when it was revealed to me that they also had investments that were turning, that was worth an awful bunch of money, too.

L: Did anybody ever say how much an awful bunch of money might have been?

J: No.

L: Did you feel that when they said that, they were talking about more than the value of the church of Scientology, any kind of feeling?

J: I got the feeling that it was some inextricable money, some great amount of money, tied up in investments, and the details I did not even want to know, because I was walking on shaky grounds.

L: So, they may have been in Miscavige's name, or Starkey's name or somebody else's name, or even in the church's name.

J: Anything's possible. I think more, it was connected with the WISE, the secular stuff. I think it was more in those arenas.

L: Let's talk about the IRS and Scientology. Did anyone inside of Scientology when you were there, ever speak of hiding facts or creating a fraud in any shape, manner, or form, to...

J: ...to the IRS. We talked about this quite a bit already on tape. I told you about the document destruction.

L: Right. Were the attorneys..

J: The attorneys were there, checking all along the way, each step of completion, to make sure that there was some type of corporate integrity there, to show the IRS. They looked at the books, they changed the books, whatever they did with the books, get rid of the advices, yes, it was a continuing process.

L: They knew in effect, that in essence, the whole church was controlled either by Miscavige or Hubbard, and there was no separate corporations. The attorneys knew this, yet filed these documents, knowing that this was a fraud.

J: Right.

L: What attorneys were involved in that again?

J: The Lenske brothers, Heller, those were the major ones. Heller even went up so far as to stand up on video saying he was part of the new management. I mean, now that he was speaking about it, he had an investment in it for sure. He would get up as a public speaker, speaking to the Scientologists, telling them how things are.

L: And, they knew along this was a fraud they were perpetrating on the IRS.

J: Sure.

L: Do you have any idea how valuable the IRS tax-exempt status is to Scientology?
How valuable they view it?

J: I'm sure it's like a crown jewel to them.

L: I've heard that they had a billion dollars in tax liability that was dismissed when they got that fraudulent tax status. Is that possible from what you heard?

J: Sure.

L: Did you ever hear anyone say what they thought their tax liability was, if they didn't get the status?

J: Yes I do, and I don't recall the figure. I do know that was not even a concern, the concern was getting the money out of the country to these foreign bank accounts.

L: They just wanted the money out. No, that's it for today.

[END OF SESSION]

Tape 4 Continued, August 26, 1998

L: Today is the 25th of August [L got date wrong; was 26th]. I'm sitting with Jesse Prince. This is Lawrence Wollersheim, we're continuing going over various materials. We're going over today, a list that FACTNet put out several years ago of questions for former members to help bring out information on Scientology's activities because Scientology is so cloaked in secrecy and security clearances, and compartmentalized dirty tricks divisions. Unless you reach out to former members, and ask them to give their pieces, you can't put the puzzle completely together. A lot of people wind up suffering because of it. That's what we are going over. Jesse, do you want to start with your first note?

J: Well, I made a note here for #2. [Reading] "Scientology members are forbidden to talk to each other about anything harmful that happens to them or others while involved with Scientology." This is an extremely early indoctrination that is common among all Scientologists. I guess you really come up to it when you take any version or form of Scientology's PTSSP course. Suppressive persons or trouble source person, where you are heavily indoctrinated not to ever speak about bad things that happen because you are spreading enturbulation, they call it. You are just indoctrinated through a series of steps progressively in Scientology to remain silent. The next thing you learn is to lie. It is based against these eight principles of existence that L. Ron Hubbard says he came up with. It's basically OK to lie if your lie is protecting the greater number of these 8 points of existence, which is just more coercive crazy mind control stuff.

L: Do you know of any situation where people were told to keep quite about certain things that went wrong, or were bad, or criminal in Scientology, any of this, they told that this is the greatest good for the greatest number dynamics, so you need to be silent about this? Does anything pop up to mind right off the bat?

J: You know, I've said so many, it would just be regurgitating what I've already said.

L: Let's go on to the next point.

J: OK, I made a point #3. [Reading] "Scientology members are deceived by Scientology policies into keeping silent about any member casualties or illegal activities they might hear about, or be a part of." The only thing I can relate to this is something that I mentioned yesterday in regards to the Gilman Hot Springs location, how you get this pack of advices, they're not even policy letters. Advices from L. Ron Hubbard, Annie, or whoever, that basically trains you how not to interact with the legal system when seeking something from the legal or social system in America, such as abortions or different medical aid for operations or things like this. They're basically trained to lie. When I first came to the base I was given an assumed name, and used that in town. There is a false address that everyone uses there. This is like indoctrination when you get there, you

are told, "You don't tell the truth about what you're doing, you say this is just a music studio. No management exists here whatsoever." This kind of thing.

L: Why are you told to lie about who you are, what you're doing? What is the reason?

J: I wish I knew.

L: You just lie because you're told to.

J: Instantly.

L: Let's go on.

J: [Reading] "#4"Scientology has not stopped its abusive practice and is totally incapable of reforming itself." I think I just kind of covered that a whole lot earlier. Question is, [Reading] "Please describe any knowledge you have of the following situations, #1 any fraud or deception used to get money from members using their credit cards or loans from lending institutions, or their families." I've just seen it repeatedly done, specifically at Flag, where a person would be told they are not at a flat point on their auditing, and get sent to the registrar. The person would already come with no money, they will have exhausted all of their money already. There was a routing form that Scientology put these people on. My point, or check in there was cramming, where you just look at a person's file and make sure that the auditing, or the practices that they were getting were done. At which point they would get sent on to the registrar. The registrar was after me, but I just know the nightmares and the horrors that happened to people once they got to them registrars. I do have a friend, Thomas Randhoff, who was a public Scientology, who told me a horror story about going to the registrar as a public Scientologist, how they got him to use his credit cards, call his parents for money, so that he could get all of these urgently needed services based on his personality analysis test. He was also unduly influenced because he was an understudy of Chick Corea for a couple of years. He had that influence, too. Chick is constantly pushing him into, so he definitely ran into some difficulties with Scientology earlier on, based on their regging practices.

L: So, would you characterize the way that they, I mean, when you say they're not at a flat point, means that they're not complete, means they're not complete?

J: Right.

L: Is there a danger there that would be conveyed to the person. Is there some sort of fear, or it is, well, you're not complete, and it would be nice of you got this auditing, but there's no big thing.

J: No, the idea is that you're in personal danger, you're not able to mentally function like you should unless you have this. You're open to unseen forces having an effect on your life in a very detrimental way.

L: So the person believes that something bad will happen to him if he doesn't give them more money?

J: Yes.

L: Did you ever hear of amounts of money that people would sign over when they believed this, that they had to give them more money?

J: A 12 ½ hour intensive, I believe at the time I was doing it, was like \$8,000.

L: For 12 ½ hours it was \$8,000? Do you believe that the people that were doing this believed that they really had to get them to sign it, or do you believe that this was money motivated?

J: This was money motivated, for the organization. The organization each week has to have its stats up. It has to each week to more than it did last week. It has nothing to do with the individual or anything like that. It's about getting more, doing more.

L: So you mean, the director of income of the organization might look at all the people that are receiving services and kind of look at the ones that they might target who are in the middle, who they might tell these things, you're in danger to, to get these people to get even more money?

J: Right. They regularly go through active pre-clear files, which is basically anyone that is on lines there are getting services. The case supervisors, and this is another point of, it's just so funny that they just brought this up in the deposition about who would be allowed to see a pre-clear folder. The case supervisor goes through and lists in the summary for the registrar, what the person had, gives them an estimate of how long they think he's going to need more, and then they figure how much it's going to cost, and call the person incessantly. It's a never-ending process.

L: Have you ever seen a sales person look in a person's PC file?

J: Yes.

L: Can you name the person.

J: No, but I seen it as a standard practice. I've seen it so much at Flag.

L: You mean this was not a rarity that these sales people would look inside the PCs folders?

J: On no, not a rarity at all.

L: It wasn't a rarity. Why would a sales person be looking inside the folders?

J: For a tech estimate, to look at the program a little more. To see how much more money he could get.

L: OK. Let's go on with the next one.

J: [Reading] "Anyone who was fair game or had their reputation destroyed by Scientology." The people that I know who were definitely fair game was even mentioned.

L: They actually said it within the organization, that somebody was fair game?

J: Yeah.

L: Who said?

J: Marty Rathburn, David Miscavige.

L: Who did they say was fair game?

J: Lawrence Wollersheim, Gerry Armstrong.

L: You actually heard that. What time did they say this? What year?

J: This was during the period of time where there was litigation going between these two litigates.

L: For years Scientology has been saying they canceled the fair game, they don't do that anymore, that doesn't exist, and you actually heard them call Lawrence Wollersheim and Gerry Armstrong fair game?

J: Yep.

L: Anything else on that, any other people that you heard them..?

J: Somebody re-wrote the fair game policy. I remember I was there when that happened, because the argument being is that, "Yes, there is still fair game, but public-relations-wise there are some things that are 'misinterpreted' in the original policy, so we'll take them out, but the meaning is there, what you do to these people who are fair game."

L: Was this altered with L. Ron Hubbard's approval, or was he dead by them?

J: I was say he was pretty incoherent by then. That was right around all the probate time, all of this kind of stuff. I do believe that Vaughn Young is the person that wrote it, re-wrote it.

L: This is just a little off where you're going. Do you know about guns being stored at Scientology?

J: I know that all the security guards, over the booth, they have little booths built all around the property, and they all have weapons. I know weapons are stored in gun cabinets down in the main security office, and I know that they are all weapon trained.

L: So they have weapons in the main security office?

J: And in the booths. Shotguns.

L: Do any of the Scientology executives, like Miscavige or Rath...

J: Every one of them has extensive... I know David Miscavige has at least 3 or 4 gun cabinets full of all different kind of rifles, hand guns, this type of thing. Norman Starkey, the same, he even has an elephant gun there, that just knocks you away. L. Ron Hubbard was fascinated with guns. Richard Aznaran, his first introduction to doing something with L. Ron Hubbard that I know of, besides being his personal secretary, was to be his gun IC. This was to take the extensive amount of guns he has, which I would say would be over 40, 50 guns and rifles, and make sure that they're cleaned, buy new ones. He would go up there and test them. People in RTC would buy him guns, he would shoot them and say, "Oh, this is really nice." It was definite gun activity.

L: Were there any military weapons?

J: Yeah. [BOTH TALKING AT ONCE] AR-18s, Mini-14's.

L: Uzi's, anything like automatic or semi-automatic illegal guns?

J: All of them were semi-automatic that I knew of. I didn't know of any fully-automatic weapons. The Uzi's, yep.

L: They had Uzi's?

J: David Miscavige has an Uzi.

L: David Miscavige has an Uzi? Any of the other executives?

J: Mark Yeager had quite an array of guns at the time I was there. Ron Miscavige, David Miscavige's younger brother, or older brother...

L: Why did they say they had all these guns? Did they ever make a comment why they had so many guns?

J: For security.

L: It wasn't a hobby they were collecting antique guns?

J: Well, it was a dual... No, no, not antique guns. The best state-of-the-art guns. It was security purposes in case anything ever happened, they felt protected, because they had their arms, their guns. It was definitely a personal thing.

L: Do you think if the government was going to go in and arrest David Miscavige and these top people that they would possibly respond?

J: In a standoff? Yes.

L: In a standoff. So they would respond with guns?

J: Yes.

L: Do you know of any other centers of Scientology that guns or survival provisions may be stored, their place up in Mendocino, the Mexican desert, the ranch down in Mexico, or any other places that they've set up as survivalist centers? To flee to, like an escape plan?

J: There was that place in Nevada. Then there was Creston, and then there's where CST is located, up in the mountains. I've been there once, and Lord knows, I've been there a couple of times, it's been some years ago, and Lord knows I couldn't tell you where it is.

L: California mountains?

J: Yeah, California mountains.

L: Where's CST is headquartered. Do you think they have weapons there?

J: I know they have weapons there. I've been up there shooting weapons myself. I brought my own weapons there. At the time I had a 45 and a Mini-14. There were plenty of weapons there, we'd go target shooting.

L: When you say target-shooting weapons, are we talking 20 guns?

J: 20, 30 rifles, hand guns.

L: And how many people are out at these locations, for 20 or 30 guns? 400 people?

J: No. I saw like maybe 8.

L: 8 people and 30 guns. Why do they have all those guns up there?

J: I think a lot of them are just guns owned by people, it was very in-vogue, or faddish to have multiple guns, just have a bunch of guns. Everybody had lots of guns.

L: Do you know about any escape plan/policy, or evacuation policy for Sea Org members?

J: No I don't.

L: Do you know of any for the top executives of Scientology if they become alarmed?

J: The only thing that I knew about is evacuation of the money, the Lichtenstein. There were plans in place to make sure that the IRS wouldn't get any money or no one else. They had several banks that they at that time, researched, that would be outside of the United States' jurisdiction, and the money could go there.

L: Do they keep guns on the ship of the Flag land base?

J: Yep.

L: Other than in the security office?

J: I know normally the executives all have guns.

L: All of the senior executives, in their rooms?

J: Yep.

L: Would these senior executives, if they were challenged... What would cause Scientology to respond in a... from your being inside Scientology, what outside threat would throw them into a violent reaction, if that could happen? What do you think would do that?

J: Like if people in Army uniforms or something like that showed up and stormed the gates or something like that.

L: Do you think they would go for their guns?

J: Yes. I think there would be a standoff.

L: OK. Have you ever seen or heard or a directive by any of the executives that if we are, if the government tries to forcibly enter any of our centers that we'll fight back.

J: No.

L: Never a comment ever made at any meetings or anything like that, nothing in writing. Is there anything in policies that would imply that the Sea Org members, this is the paramilitary group, would do that? Have you ever...

J: They are bound to protect L. Ron Hubbard's interests above their own life. So, yeah, I think you have the zealots, sure.

L: Do you know of any secret storage areas in Scientology where records are stored, or food may be stored, or money may be stored? Have you ever heard?

J: Yes, at the Gold Land Base they have a whole survivalist thing going on where there was food. Canned food was kept in a secret area at the Gold Land Base. Graham crackers, canned meat, gasoline, spare gasoline. Big underground tanks of gasoline. Generators, fallout areas, where people could be at. Yeah.

L: Fallout areas?

J: You know, like concrete.

L: Like a bunker or shelter?

J: Yeah.

L: Underground?

J: Yes.

L: At the Gold Center. The Gold Center is located where?

J: In Hemet, California.

L: At Hemet, California. Did anyone ever say why they had that there?

J: Yeah, in case of a catastrophe.

L: Social, political, environmental.

J: Yeah.

L: Any other storage areas where they store...

J: Well, they had some but they were in constant transit, they would just be used for a while and they would change.

L: Keep moving it.

J: Right.

L: What were they storing that they had to keep moving it?

J: Documents, incriminating documents.

L: Is there a place that they still save certain documents that they can't destroy that they have to preserve, but they're incriminating enough that they keep the storage location secret?

J: I think if anyplace to find those things, I mean they keep it in transient, away from them, but they also maintain copies on certain premises. I think the most fruitful source of that would be CST.

L: CST in the California mountains? You mentioned something about storage shelters, the storage at Gold, and Gold is in Hemet, California?

J: Right.

L: Do you know anything about Scientology storing dangerous chemicals that could be used in an offensive or defensive manner, anything, any type of chemical?

J: No I don't.

L: Do you know anything about any drugs that they would use to incapacitate or to drug or poison anyone? Any type drugs like that, have you ever heard about any LSD being use, or pharmaceuticals that could cause somebody to maybe fall asleep and anything like that?

J: Nope.

L: Let's go on with the next question.

J: [Reading] "Any abusive action such as copyright or trade mark abuse taken by Scientology to inhibit religious members or former members, or to inhibit the freedom of such persons or practices to practice their freely chosen religion." Again on this point, I think I spoke about this in relation to David Mayo, in that he was a person that wrote the majority of all of those NOTs issues and then they were very litigious against him, in the RICO suit in this that and the other thing.

L: Speaking of David Mayo, so they tried to shut down his religious reform group, or his religious splinter group because they viewed it as a competitor?

J: Yes, they did a three pronged attack, they did legal, they did investigative harassment of things, ODC, CDC, and public relations put out issues. They go his mailing list, yes I'm remembering this, Bob Mithoff stole the mailing list.

L: Bob Mithoff stole the mailing list for this reform church.

J: And then took it and started mailing Scientology like covert written letters to discredit the people you know, David Mayo, and I think his wife was there, Meril was there for a while. Julie...

L: Through the interstate mails they took a stolen mail list and mailed letters that made it look like it was David Mayo? Were they trying to make it look like it was David Mayo's organization?

J: Yep, always.

L: They were impersonating David Mayo and his organization through interstate mails. Were they selling anything through interstate mail?

J: No, just dis-information, mis-information. They just turned it and just started sending, I mean, there was these letters that RTC used to make up, now you're making me remember. RTC used to create and finance a newsletter that was very derogatory to the AAC and publish it to its mailing list.

L: Hand it out to the stolen mailing list for this reform group?

J: Right. There was a 3-prong attack, there was public relations, investigations, and legal.

L: How valuable was the mailing list in Scientology?

J: It's invaluable.

L: Would you say it's worth more than \$100, Scientology mailing lists?

J: Much, much more.

L: How much would say the Scientology mailing list is worth?

J: It's its life breath.

L: Would Scientology value all its mailing lists at more than \$100,000?

J: More.

L: A million?

J: Way more than that. However much money they've got in the bank, however much money they will continue to have, that's the value of their mailing list.

L: They stole the mailing list from this other organization that may have been worth, how much do you think their mailing list was?

J: They also were into their financial records, and we knew how much money they made every day. We knew how much money was paid by who.

L: They're making \$5,000 a week, \$10,000 a week?

J: Like \$20,000, \$30,000.

L: \$30,000 a week. What do you think the value of their mailing list would have been worth, give me an estimate.

J: Couple hundred thousand dollars.

L: So, Bob Mithoff performed a theft in that organization of a document worth several hundred thousand dollars, which then Scientology created a program...

J: A newsletter and a program.

L: ...and then started sending fraudulent material to that list, interstate throughout the United States and possibly even foreign countries.

J: Yeah, because Robert Scott used to get the stuff to Steve and Mau Belmain [?].

L: Bob Mithoff, what is his post in Scientology?

J: He didn't have a post, he was just strictly under cover.

L: Did he ever hold a post?

J: Oh yeah, he used to be a staff at the Celebrity Center.

L: What's his post now, do you have any idea?

J: I have no idea.

L: Speaking of Mayo, David Mayo wound up with drug charges in the Dominican Republic. From what I understand, that may or may not be correct, that someone planted drugs on him in the Dominican Republic.

J: I remember an incident when David Mayo was stopped and strip-searched or something, had something to do with drugs. Yeah, that was a direct result of some things that Jeff Schriver was doing, who was running P.I.s in to create calamity, to make it look like he had drugs. How did he describe it. He said, "Well, these people down here will do anything, these Mexican people. You give them a little money. When David Mayo gets to that gate, he's going to have a big shock." Yeah, he was actually detained, I think,

for a whole day or something. That was totally orchestrated by the Invest person represented in the Religious Technology Center that happened to David Mayo.

L: That person's name was?

J: Jeff Schriver.

L: He was running what private investigators?

J: It would be hard to say. Someone from Gene Ingram's office. Because Gene Ingram is the guy that says, you can use this one, you can use that one.

L: He allocated people from Ingram's office.

J: Right. And then there's a network of where they are, how they help each. This was in Mexico. Through that network we got some serious criminal activities going.

L: Through Mexico?

J: I believe it was the Mexican government, the Mexico area.

L: Mexico area. In other words Ingram's people hired someone in Mexico...

J: You're making me remember something, some person getting the shit beat out of them because of PIs. Some kind of magical person, and I seen his name recently, that they said was a squirrel, and he got the living crap beat out of him. He was a homosexual, too. That was also done. I've seen the names in these documents.

L: OK. This was when you were in the investigation loop of Scientology.

J: Yes.

L: So they would come across your desk?

J: Yeah.

L: And you would destroy the documents?

J: Right.

L: Let me just go back to this thing. Scientology PIs, do you know which PI, was it's Ingram's firm?

J: It had to do with Ingram's firm, or a network firm.

L: Ingram's firm arranged to have an individual beat up who was a squirrel, who was trying to set up a religious reform...

J: He was kind of an opinion leader kind of person because he was professed to have certain magical abilities, to do something.

L: Hal Putoff, or the people up at Stanford Research Center?

J: No, it was a Mexican man, and he was very popular down there.

L: So they arranged to have him beat up in Mexico.

J: Right.

L: Anyone else in this venue?

J: Well, John Nelson, you know as I mentioned, when he was over in the Far East.

L: They tried to set him up on drug charges, and they stopped because they thought he would blab to crimes before he was arrested and killed for possession of drugs in Malaya. We were talking about David Mayo, any other things that were done to David Mayo that were arranged that was criminal acts?

J: Well, systematic public relations campaign was done and sent to that stolen mailing list. Also agents or staff members would go out and pass out things, demonstrate around the AAC, this kind of thing. Similar to what they still do. Talk about the person's preclear folder information.

L: They divulge the confidential confessions that David Mayo and Julie Mayo in their program to destroy these religious reformers.

J: Right.

L: OK. Let's keep going on the list, and we'll come back.

J: [Reading] "Have you experienced any of the following mental or emotional symptoms while in Scientology, or since you left?" For me, I know it's been...

L: We'll do this selection privately.

J: [Reading] "Any celebrities in our out of Scientology who have had similar symptoms or experiences?" I mentioned about Tom Cruise after he finished OT III. I mentioned about John Travolta, I think that pretty much covers it. [Reading] "11. Any persons who were baby-watchers subjected to isolation orders because they because psychotic or suicidal." I think we covered that pretty much yesterday. [Reading] "13. Any Scientology related coercion to

induce an already weakened or infirm persons to buy dangerous additional Scientology services, commit suicide, or speed their own deaths by abandoning normal medical practices for economic conveniences or security or political reasons." I think we covered that yesterday.

L: There's been a large debate whether Scientology would have told Steve Fishman, are you familiar with Steve Fishman? I'll tell you what happened, and I don't know if you've ever heard of anything like this. Steve Fishman claims that when he got caught doing this stock fraud, that he was giving Scientology hundreds of dollars from his stock fraud, that he was ordered to do an end of case, to kill himself to protect Scientology. Have you ever heard of anything like that where a staff member is told to harm himself to protect Scientology?

J: I think as a general term, that's something that's understood, especially by every Sea Org member that their life is in devotion. You sign a billion year contract, your life is in devotion of Scientology. Your physical body is nothing. You come and go again and again, so, I think that's a pretty prevalent idea. Whether people are courageous enough to do that is... I know that starts with introduction to the Sea Org.

L: You don't have any information whether that happened with Steve or anybody else that it's ever happened to?

J: No I do not.

L: OK, let's keep going.

J: OK. [Reading] "#18. The names of former GO, OSA auditors, staff or medical officers who would have had access to information or been involved in handling of member suicides, attempted suicides, psychoses or neuroses related to Scientology services." Yeah, person, Martine, a French woman, I forget her name. She was a medical officer. She was there for Phoebe, she was there for Diane Morrison, she was there for that kid who had an aneurysm and died and worked in RTRC as a medical person.

L: OK. Anybody else that you can think of as we're talking?

J: No.

L: OK. A few minutes ago we were talking about evacuation plans, and the other day you mentioned to me a Fran Harris, thought she might be questioned or arrested.

J: She was sent to Europe.

L: Who sent her to Europe?

J: David Miscavige.

L: Is it the practice of Scientology that if the government, or court is trying to get a certain member to the witness stand who has damaging information that they will be ordered to a different country and transferred away?

J: Right.

L: What was Fran Harris involved in?

J: Criminal reg deals. I mean, she was raping the orgs. They came up with this idea minimum book stocks. ASI has their stats down, so they systematically started going through the orgs, sending someone there to inspect, like they were acting in the exact same capacity as a Religious Technology Center, or CSI would at the time, of just going in inspecting the bookstores. Saying, "You don't have enough books, buy these books now, cut us a check." On it goes to their weekly state, everybody gets their weekly commission and we're all happy.

L: When you say gets their commission, are some of these executives getting technology on how much money they take out of the organizations?

J: Yes, absolutely.

L: Describe these commissions?

J: Fran Harris got plenty, Ray Wilhere got plenty.

L: When you say plenty, how much commission would they receive?

J: Hundred, thousands.

L: Thousands of dollars on these. While the other Sea Org members are making \$20, \$30 a month, these two are making thousands on commissions on forcing books into these organizations. Did these organizations have a right to refuse to buy?

J: No, they had no right whatsoever. Also, Author Services made commission as a corporation...

[TAPE ENDS]

Tape 5, August 26, 1998 and August 27, 1998

Lawrence Wollersheim and Jesse Prince

J: Now, I do believe this is the way it worked because I had privy to see the Author Services bonus system. Author Services received a certain commission or a certain percentage of all monies gotten from organizations for L. Ron Hubbard's interest. Out of

that, depending on what position you held within the organization, you were signed a percentage of whatever that was. And, so, yes, you got a commission every week. Just by being there, even if you were the claimant.

L: How much do you think the top people at ASI might have been making in commissions? Or do you know? Did you ever see or hear talk, then you know, "I made 500 bucks this week" or --

J: Well, I know Mike Eldridge was in there and I know one week he made \$900.

L: In commissions?

J: Right, just paid, you know, his percentage of the commissions.

L: His percentage of the commission was \$900 for that week. Now, how many other Sea Org members make that kind of money, out of the 13,000...

J: They were the most affluent Sea Org members in Scientology that I know of, Author Services staff.

L: Did the other Sea Org's members know they were making this amount of money?

J: Yes and they were told they were a separate non-religious corporation and they were told all they were getting paid was minimum wage.

L: So, in other words, they were lied to, saying that the people in ASI were making minimum wage when, in fact, they were making huge commissions?

J: Huge commissions.

L: And creaming off the assets of Scientology for...

J: Right. So Fran, in particular, systematically went through to make sure that everyone kept getting the commissions, and she had the blessings of David Miscavige and Norman Starkey.

L: Because they were getting...

J: They were getting paid.

L: They were getting lots of money every week.

J: Sure.

L: That nobody else...

J: This is how gold starts stacking up in these little personal treasure chests, the rare coins.

L: So they're milking the money off the top of the corporation, telling the other Sea Org members that they're making minimum wage or that...

J: Yeah right.

L: ...They're not making this kind of money.

J: And they were told to not be extravagant, not be showy, just take your money.

L: So, in other words, just spend your money secretly and not let the others Sea Org members know they're being basically had.

J: Right.

L: I mean, do you think about it now and you feel like you were being had or were you getting a piece of the pie too at this time?

J: No.

L: How much... So, let me understand this.

J: And they kept this very secret, too.

L: OK. I could understand why they would keep it secret. 13,000 staff members living in filth, starving, working day and night, and David Miscavige and these top people creaming money off and spending it secretly -- I'd get pretty pissed if I found out about it. I'd feel like I had been had and I was a fool. OK. They had, ASI had the authority to order organizations to buy books?

J: Right.

L: And they would go from the ASI corporation to the Church corporation and have one of their executives tell them to write out a check for maybe \$1000, maybe 5?

J: And then if they didn't comply, they got sent to ethics, they were subjected to harassment.

L: So if they didn't follow the executive of another separate and distinct corporation, that supposedly had no authority over this other corporation...

J: They would get creamed.

L: And this was if they didn't give them the money they wanted and bought what they told them to buy?

J: Right. But, Fran would often, and not only Fran but Terry Gamboa too, would run over to BPI and make them go into organizations and demand -- I mean, BPI was just an execution arm for sales for Author Services, in essence.

L: So, BPI was ordered to do something which it then ordered the other organizations to do it, and ASI was controlling the cash of the other separate Scientology corporations by simply ordering them to buy stuff.

J: Right. Or sending a person from BPI. But the orders would come from Author Services to BPI or from Author Services directly to the organizations however to get that money in there with there bonuses.

L: Was David Miscavige ordering this or Norman Starkey? Who was ordering, "Tell them to buy these books and send us a commission check"? Who was the first person in the command chain?

J: L. Ron Hubbard.

L: Hubbard.

J: Minimum book stocks.

L: To Miscavige on down the line.

J: Right. This pumped up ASI considerably. They became very, a very luxurious organization to work for. They had extravagant parties and had nice little trips and --

L: Tell us about the extravagant parties and the trips that you can remember.

J: Well, they would rent, uh, just go to a restaurant, you know, the big Japanese restaurant, I think they've gone to every damn giant, expensive restaurant there in Los Angeles, you know, just having their little outings. They would report these, all of these things were written up exactly what they would do week after week after week because sometimes they didn't do good on the week or that they would have other problems, then all of Author Services were come up to Golden Era Productions, to have meetings where microphones were suspended from the ceilings, and these meetings were taped. And they were run in a very orderly fashion and these meetings would then go up to L. Ron Hubbard so that they could see, "Well, what's going on with the organizations, what's going on with Author Services, what's going on with my money?" So every week in 1982 when I came to the base at Gilman Hot Springs, Author Services staff would come so sometimes I would have to do actions, you know cramming and this kind of stuff. And, you know, they'd have barbecues and they'd go out and they'd do whatever, water slide places, whatever.

L: Did regular Sea Org members, were they taken out to fancy restaurants?

J: Never, never, never.

L: Did they have these little trips and outings where everything was paid for?

J: Never.

L: How many -- so, just a small group of people at ASI and RTC that are being given these enormous privileges.

J: Well, no. It was actually ASI that had enormous privileges and then, over time, it started with RTC and CSI.

L: So, the top people, Miscavige was spreading the wealth to keep loyalty or whatever and the normal Scientologists have no idea.

J: No clue.

L: They just think everybody's working and suffering and there were actually these top executives were actually told to hide what they're spending and what they're getting.

J: Yes. Don't show others. Don't talk to other staff about how much money you make, you know. Don't be flashy, buying a bunch of shit because if you do, you'll lose your position.

L: So they had to spend their money secretly and discreetly. They would go on vacations. They'd take a bunch of their staff members.

J: Always dressed with perfect Gucci clothes, all this kind of crap, you know. The most expensive.

L: Okay. Let's go on with the next one then.

J: [Reading] "Any coercion for economic convenience or security reasons to induce already weakened, infirm, or ill persons to buy dangerous additional auditing?" We did that one.

L: OK.

J: [Reading] "21. Scientology child abuse, child neglect, improper health care, supervision or education for children?" I think I pretty much covered that extensively yesterday on the tapes.

L: Okay.

J: [Reading] "22. Any type of physical or mental abuse of staff members

including such things as the RPF/Rehabilitation Project Force, beatings, confinement, excessive work detail, denial of adequate food, threat, and coercion?" Well, yes. This is like the order of the day. Um, well RPF, you were always constantly threatened with the RPF if you really were non-compliant or really just were not doing what you could do, and we all know what the RPF is. But the other tortuous thing that L. Ron Hubbard came up with just before he finished losing his mind and died was this running program where a pole, a special pole, was erected in the middle of the desert in the hot sun and it was painted a certain color. And you were made to run a certain distance away from it but around it in a constant circle, in one direction one day, another circle another day, and you were told to keep you attention on the pole while you were running. I've seen people just go into a state of physical collapse because of this.

L: How long would they make people run?

J: Twelve hours a day.

L: They'd run for 12 solid hours?

J: They'd go around in a circle, yes.

L: And what was the purpose? Was it, was it people that were doing well that would run?

J: No, people that were having the most difficult time.

L: This was a punishment.

J: Punishment, extreme punishment.

L: And what was the purpose that they said that running the pole would do?

J: Bring them into present time.

L: OK. All right. That's the reason, is because they weren't in present time and so running for 12 hours -- were these people in condition to run for 12 hours?

J: No.

L: What happens if they fell down? They stopped running?

J: There was a helper that came out and just helped them to keep going around the pole.

L: They literally kept you moving the full 12 hours whether you couldn't move --

J: They called the running program, ICE would come out there and keep... get you going along.

L: If they had to drag you, would they drag you?

J: No, I don't know if they did that.

L: Okay, but they'd keep you moving for the full 12 hours.

J: But I know David Miscavige, when he came to David Mayo, when he put him on the running program, his punishment was that he had to run until you could just see his head going around the circle. In other words, until he'd run a rut into the path.

L: That's what Miscavige said, "I want him to run"

J: Yeah.

L: You heard that said, "Until all you could see was the top of his head from the dirt"? Was this done for punishment or was this done to help a person?

J: Punishment.

L: It was strictly punishment.

J: Under the guise of help, but it was punishment. I mean, it was obvious what it was.

L: Did you ever see anyone helped by this thing?

J: No.

L: Did anyone become more in present time?

J: No.

L: Become enlightened or spiritually -- This was a punishment program.

J: You knew you were in big trouble when you were told you had to go on the running program.

L: Were people exhausted at the end of 12 hours.

J: That's an understatement.

L: Tell me what you saw after 12 hours.

J: People barely able to move. After a few days of that, just laying stiff in isolation now 'cause they're sick, you know. Just stare out in the desert in that damn sun.

L: You mean, like, it was directly under the sun in the desert?

J: Right. But then they put a water hose around the track. It was a little hose so that you could get sprinkled with water so that, like that to Hell is supposed to do something about just getting straight sun poisoning. So, yet you have to just run out in the desert.

L: What happened? Did any of these people's muscles tighten up after, you know, were they in pain? Their muscles hurt?

J: Yeah.

L: And even if they hurt, they would get them up the next day?

J: Yeah.

L: And make them run?

J: Right.

L: What would they threaten them with when you're in that much run that would make someone run?

J: Just, "Come on, get up." You know, just, it's not even so much a threat. It's just a constant, "Come on. You gotta go. Come on! Come on! Come on! You have to do it."

L: Okay.

J: Keep going.

L: What else have you seen? Anything else but that one?

J: Mmm. No, just that. Beatings I told you about. Confinement I told you about. Excessive work detail. I know, just in my own specific case, when I left in '87 and threatened to sue 'em and do all this other stuff, and then they got my wife and they brought me back. They made me pull these big toolies, which are these things that have the cigars on them, in a dry riverbed, for two weeks for no reason at all. Me and Spike Bush, simply because we'd gone against them. And it wasn't unusual to have a staff member who was in very bad regard, like you'd have to go into the galley and scrub grease from... and work all night. They did this to people, just denigrating...

L: What's the longest you ever heard them work somebody without sleep?

J: Me and other people, 30 hours on, three hours off.

L: And how long would this go on for?

J: This went on for a couple weeks.

L: 30 hours on, three hours off. Okay. Let's go onto the next one.

J: Four dollars and thirty cents a week.

L: Big money.

J: Big money. Hard work. [Reading] "Pregnant female staff members being ordered to get abortions, or being worked so hard and getting such poor quality pre-natal care and nutrition during pregnancy that they gave birth to deformed or low birth weight babies?" I believe I covered this with you yesterday. It's prevalent and just as common as can be. [Reading] "Staff members who need health care or operations being sent to emergency rooms or other government health services being told to say he or she was indigent and to hide the fact that they were Scientology staff members?"

L: We covered that.

J: [Reading] "#26. Any staff member who was physically or mentally coerced, abused, or punished by David Miscavige, or by his orders, by staff, by the order of any other Scientology staff member?" We talked about that already.

L: Right.

J: [Reading] "27. Any administrative Sea Org or non-Sea Org staff member who was paid less than minimum wage and the appropriate overtime?" Well, that's everyone.

L: So, other than ASI and Miscavige and the top executives and the top people at CSI and the top people at RTC, of their claimed 13,000 staff members, how many of those people do you think are at minimum, below minimum wage?

J: Every one of them, simply for ASI.

L: How many staff are at ASI? How many people aren't at minimum wage of the 13,000 claimed staff members?

J: How many are not at minimum wage?

L: Yeah.

J: 12,080 are not making minimum wage. About 20 people.

L: About 20 people are making big money and everybody else is working to save the planet at \$4 or \$18 or \$20 a week, living like an animal.

J: Right.

L: Okay.

J: Okay. [Reading] "30. Any fraud perpetrated on any government agency by Scientology while you were a member?" I think I covered that in my affidavit and my deposition and these tapes.

L: Okay.

J: [Reading] "34. Scientology falsely construing or projecting a religious image to unfairly obtain tax, legal, and other economic advantages?" Yeah, I remember, as part of this IRS thing, everyone had to do the ministers course so that it could be seen as a church, that they were like ministers.

L: So, these people were ordered and did anyone say that we're doing this for tax purposes? Did you ever hear anything?

J: Yeah, at the meetings, yeah, as part of our -- David Miscavige.

L: David Miscavige said, "We're now going to make everyone do a ministers course and become ministers so that we can get IRS--"

J: And I believe that that came from L. Ron Hubbard.

L: Okay.

J: I know David Miscavige was the one pushing it.

L: Did any of the senior executives of Scientology in your presence ever say to you, you know, that "We're only doing this religion thing for tax advantages," or "We're only doing it to defend ourselves, or certain legal advantages"? Did they ever say to you, you know, that this is, you know, "We're really a counseling organization. We're really a, did they all believe that they were a religion then?"

J: No, I don't think - No one believes that but no one would be, would openly say that. It would be instant RPF. You know, no one would dare do that.

L: OK. Um, keep going.

J: OK. [Reading] "35. Secret and non-secret locations of all records, copies and records and archives of Scientology, including..." We discussed that.

L: OK.

J: [Reading] "36. Scientology records that had been destroyed or by shredder, chemical, or other processes?" We covered that.

L: OK.

J: [Reading] "45. Attempting to blackmail, bribe, or intimidate an attorney or a law firm to impede their ability to prosecute a case against Scientology?"

L: Have you ever heard of any firm that went against Scientology?

J: Intimidate. Intimidate. Um, who was David Mayo's attorney? What was his name?

L: Maybe if you started saying what they did to him, you'll remember his name.

J: Just a PI campaign, you know. PI's following him around. ODC, CDC, overt data collection, you know, just following him around, same thing that's happening here.

L: Okay. Did they do this -- do you, actually, I'll let you get going. Just go on with the next one.

J: [Reading] "49. Death threats, intimidation, or harassment of family members, friends, or employees, or anyone testifying or scheduled to testify against Scientology?" Me, me, me, me. Two times so far.

L: Did you ever hear, when you were inside of Scientology any comment that so and so was gonna, you know be threatened or, you know, "We're gonna make sure he doesn't arrive on the witness stand"?

J: They've said that about me.

L: Anyone else? Have you ever heard them talk about buying off a former staff member to make sure that he stayed silent, making loans to them, covering off the buy-off like loans to Terry Gamboa, loans to the Las Vegas group, anything along that line to buy silence?

J: Not particularly.

L: You never heard of anything like that, OK. Keep going with your list then.

J: OK. [Reading] "Harassment of opposing parties by the creation of frivolous, malicious, or superfluous lawsuits intending only to punish and silence the opposition?" I know at brief meetings that I've been to in relationship to the Wollersheim trial, the strategy was to keep the courts and the litigation going at all costs, to just, no matter what decision came down, oppose it, find some reason, just keep that going at all costs.

L: The Wollersheim strategy, take a --

J: Not one thin dime for Wollersheim.

L: OK. Did they ever talk about any code of operations on any of the attorneys?

J: Uh, Charles O'Reilly, which we talked about that. Lita Schlosser.

L: They ran covert operations on Lita Schlosser.

J: Yes.

L: Do you know anything they did --

J: Um, friends, peer pressure with her. Talked to her friends, do the peer pressure thing.

L: In other words, gather covert information, pass it to the friends to try to pressure her to back off the case.

J: Like, "Hey did you know your friend here," that kind of thing.

L: Do you believe that they ordered Charlie O'Reilly through the PI's to be beaten up.

J: Yes I do. I believe they ordered him to be beat up. I know of a man in Mexico, and we will find his name, who got the crap beat out of him.

L: Do you know of anyone else that was ever beaten up to send a signal to anyone opposing Scientology besides the attorney in my case and this Mexican guy?

J: This was, OK, this is what I will say to give you the general attitude, lest there'd be a mistake about what's going on here. We would talk about, "Wouldn't it be nice if somebody would, like beat this person up?" or "Wouldn't it be nice if this or that happen. You know they're gonna motivate, they're doing a bad thing." And then in a more secret, with the Invest people, and I know in my own personal experience, it's just, with this, it was, "Well what can we do and get away with it? What can we do and not be found about it? What can we do with the least amount of liability?" That is the way that Scientology Invest goes. So if that means hurting someone physically or whatever you can get away with.

L: So when they decide how they're gonna punish someone, and how far they're gonna break the law, they're asking themselves...

J: "What can we can get away with?"

L: "How far can we push it and get away with it?"

J: Yeah.

L: When they think they might get caught is when they stop doing, they pull back in.

J: Well, they compartmentalize whose doing the activity, so if one person does something that really fucks up, well, it's all their fault and no one else knows anything about it.

L: Would they disavow the person?

J: Sure.

L: Say that he's a renegade Scientologist?

J: Right away.

L: Was the whole reformation of Scientology after Mary Sue Hubbard when they said, you know, "We don't do this stuff anymore," it was just another...

J: Lie.

L: ...cover-up, and would you say that they're the same level of criminality before the raid by the FBI?

J: I think they're more intelligent about it, more efficient about it. No, I don't think that it's the same. Because I don't think they've been able to get them again like that.

L: But they're still basically involved in as much or less criminal activity, or the same amount of criminal activity?

J: Well, you know, I wasn't involved with the old GO, but I know the level of criminality that I saw and was involved in is really becoming clear to me as we do this and as I go through this, you know, it just happens every day.

L: Okay.

J: Happens every day.

L: Um, let's keep going with your list.

J: OK. [Reading] "Theft or alteration of documents from opposing law firms?" This, um, Bob Mithoff would get drafts or notes from meetings about legal causes of action taken against Religious Technology or CSC or whoever. He would get copies of it and bring to RTC where we would have a good eye to see what they're thinking about, what they're want to do.

L: Of the attorneys.

J: Yes.

L: Would you say that David Miscavige manages all of Scientology?

J: He does. And is the managing agent for all of Scientology. Him and it was L. Ron Hubbard. He took L. Ron Hubbard out though.

L: And David Miscavige pierces the corporate structure of any corporation? He can go in and order anything basically in any corporation and it'll happen?

J: Absolutely.

L: Somebody says no to him and they're gone?

J: They're gone.

L: RPF, the concentration camp area of Scientology?

J: Right, right.

L: So people, is it reasonable to say people fear David Miscavige and his operations?

J: Very much so. Fear and deify him. Deify him, why I don't know because he's such a coward.

L: Do you have any knowledge about, in the Wollersheim case, a fake bomb being placed on the parent's door of Mr. and Mrs. Wollersheim?

J: I remember Marty mentioning something about a bomb in connection with you.

L: Marty Rathburn.

J: Yes.

L: Can you recall --

J: He was laughing telling a story about a bomb. He was laughing about the reaction of the people. I mean, he was telling the story as if he was there, and it wasn't more elaborated than that, you know, it was like, "Hey, you know, a bomb," laughing. Think it's a big joke.

L: My father had a heart condition, and we had a fake bomb on the door and then the bomb squad with this cement truck and all that stuff in front of our house, because we

thought, and they thought, it was a real bomb, and it scared the hell out of my family. Do you know anything about two people coming up to my sister in a store, that she never saw before, walked straight up to her and said, "Your brother, Lawrence Wollersheim, will never live to collect." Did you ever hear anything about that incident?

J: Mm-uhm [No].

L: Did you ever hear about any leak or orders given to kill Lawrence Wollersheim that resulted in the FBI winding up in my door, government agents getting a tip that I was gonna be killed that night?

J: You tell me about these things that happened within a certain time. Now I do recall something about your sister, and this is what I'll say about it, besides just hearing the whispers and stuff. That information was on a need to know basis and I knew it was going on but the people that were participating in it were Dave Miscavige, Marty Rathburn and Gene Ingram.

L: The three of them --

J: In private, no none else.

L: -- were doing, setting up these covert operations on Charlie O'Reilly and my family, Judge Swearinger.

J: Right.

L: Do you know of any other threats that were made to Judge Swearinger in my case, anything? Did you ever hear anyone make comments about Judge Swearinger?

J: I remember, um, David Miscavige saying what a fucking asshole he was and um, just mentioning the fact that something was or could be done about him.

L: Could be done about him.

J: Yeah. And I think it was basically, it's like, dig up the crimes of a sexual deviant, this kind of thing.

L: Did --

J: Can we take a pause?

L: Yeah.

[Break]

L: OK. Let's do the next one on your list.

J: Okey Dokey. Let me just see where I am. Uh, Talking about #62 here. [Reading] "Scientology and/or its attorney using confidential materials, disclosures, or confessions given to Scientology by members for blackmail to silence or intimidate the individual?"

L: You already mentioned David Mayo.

J: Right, OK.

L: Anyone else? Did you ever hear them talk? Did you ever hear them say, "Go get his PC folders and get everything out of his folders that the PI's can use"?

J: Yes.

L: Who said that to who?

J: Marty, I heard Marty Rathburn say it about you, and David Miscavige was sitting there. I heard him say it about Armstrong. Margery Wakefield. I heard him say, Marty saying he had some document that she was already crazy when she came in. Bent Corydon comes up too.

L: So, Scientology on the one hand says that these are confidential confessions and they will never ever use them. That's what they tell the members who are confessing their most deep and intimate secrets, secrets that could damage their lives if they ever became public or known or completely humiliate and embarrass them.

J: Right.

L: Scientology says, "We'll never do that."

J: It willfully does it at every occasion.

L: And whenever these situations that you saw with Miscavige in the room and Rathburn ordering the contents of a person's PC file, incriminating information being given to a --

J: The OSA people would go through and all the person's OW write-ups would be pulled out of the person's pre-clear folder.

L: His evil intentions?

J: Yeah.

L: His rock slams, his sec checks, his OW processing?

J: Right.

L: You know, L10 which has to do with overts.

J: Whatever. Pull it out.

L: Anything that they could find.

J: Criminal acts they look for. 2D perversions they look for.

L: Sexual perversions.

J: Right, sexual perversions. Did I say "2D"?

L: Yeah.

J: Oh, my God help me get rid of that.

L: They'll disappear. So, that what then occurs is then they pull these all out and they give them to a PI?

J: Right.

L: And say, "This is what he does."

L: And go out and find this information.

J: Or just use it to his peers.

L: Pass it to his peers to embarrass, humiliate, and back a person off.

J: Right.

L: So, do you think if John Travolta or Tom Cruise stood up and said that they made a mistake, Scientology is dangerous and people should stay away from it...

J: They'd be over.

L: They would pull everything out of their PC folders and they would do a complete character --

J: Illegals they know about the person, intimate details that they know the person fears. Yes.

L: So the person confesses they cheated on their taxes, it would be in the PC file. Or they cheated some employee or they're hiding money or they've taken drugs. Anything.

J: Anything.

L: And that you think that Miscavige would turn on Travolta and Cruise. Would it be difficult for David Miscavige to turn on them if he thought that they had turned on him?

J: I think if they turned on him...

L: Or turned on Scientology.

J: ...it'd be a hard decision to make because they use Travolta so much. Cruise, I think they're just a little more slick than just publicly running. They would do it to his family. They would start releasing information to his family or to him. They would say, you know, "How would you feel about if people knew this, this and this, this and this?" You know, "You're doing this." There's other ways besides you telling us that this information is available. That's another good trick they use. You know, "You told us this. Well, hell, that can be found here." You know, this person suddenly speaks up, you know, corroborates the events and people so that you make it look like it didn't come from them. That the source of their --

L: They get the information from the PC file and then go and try to make it look like it came from somewhere else but they would never have been able to go anywhere else had it not been for what the person confessed in their confidential PC file.

J: Right.

L: And Scientology professes that, you know, it protects this and it sues to keep PC files secret in the courtroom on one hand, and on the other hand, the minute that you go against them, they'll give your PC files to a non Scientologist private investigator to go assassinate your character and ruin your life.

J: Right.

L: And it's all done secretly.

J: Yes.

L: Okay.

J: As an op.

L: Let me ask this. Any politicians that got into Scientology or government people, if they went against Scientology, all their confessions would be used against them?

J: Not that I know of any.

L: Okay. Let me ask you about, at one time you were involved in the computer project in Scientology?

J: Right.

L: Incomm.

J: Right.

L: What was your role?

J: Supervisor. Like, I was supervisor from a managerial position. I did daily, weekly reports about it.

L: How high were in the command structure of Scientology's computerization?

J: I was the top person.

L: You were the top person in the Scientology computer network.

J: Yes, as far as, not in technical, but in administrative, managerial.

L: Did Scientology use this network to pass messages all around the world from different computer locations.

J: Yes. OK, I know what slipped my mind and I wanted to say. The persons -- oh I think I may have said it -- the OSA staff members are the ones that would choose what to take out of a person's pre-clear folder and something juicy.

L: OSA is the intelligence division.

J: Right.

L: So, let's talk about Incomm. Incomm -- would they be getting computer reports from all over the world on the status of different organizations?

J: Ethics, whatever.

L: Was it all --

J: Usually money.

L: Was it all, just, you could, anybody could read it or was it coded or was it -- ?

J: It was encoded and encrypted. There was an encoding and encryption system that, you know, that that functions for the network; if you came outside the network and tried to get information, you'd run into encryption problems.

L: OK. So, it was encrypted so that if someone tried to receive it in translation across the country, or from Germany to Switzerland, or from the Iron Curtain to the US, nobody could read it except the Scientology people who received it at Incomm and decoded and gave it to the management people in the US?

J: Right.

L: What kind of stuff was sent in this computer communication around the world?

J: Majorly information that would do with finances, current finances.

L: Did they ever send reports on what to do in a certain situation, like in a sensitive situation if there was a PR flap, you know, somewhere, they would send instructions encoded how to deal with it?

J: No, I think that was kind of like an underground scramble activity. If something warranted it, people would be there.

L: Was, was, did Scientology gather intelligence on, in different countries, on people that they thought either could help them or might oppose them?

J: Anyone that opposed them, they gathered intelligence about. Anyone that was wanting to help them and they were like coming to them, they would have them gather intelligence about them.

L: If they were real important, they'd gather intelligence on them even if they were coming favorably to Scientology.

J: Sure.

L: Because, why would they gather intelligence on some powerful person that was favorable to Scientology.

J: No, because they were afraid of spies, double agents.

L: So, if a person was famous or powerful, they would generally run an intelligence investigation on them. Do you know of any major figures anywhere in the world that Scientology has run covert -- politicians, economic --

J: Besides the judges that I mentioned, I don't think so.

L: You don't know of any personally. But you know it to be a practice of Scientology that the local intelligence divisions would be, if someone was hostile and powerful, they could be gathering his sexual information, his financial information --

J: Where he went to high school at, where he went to college at, who were his friends.

L: Family information.

J: Where does he bank, what does his credit look like?

L: Would they gather deeper than that? That sounds really, you know, just general information. Would they gather...

J: No, financial statements aren't general information.

L: They'd get the person's actual bank records.

J: Bank records. Uh, any possessions, they would find, like what does he own? If they have a car, they'll run the plate. You know, where he got the car. How many cars? Whose name is it in? Is it financed? Is it paid for? This kind of thing. House. Where's the house? What bank is with the house? Where's the connection, you know?

L: Do you have any knowledge of any Scientologists in the covert operation being placed in the home of a political leader or powerful person in some US or any other country to observe or to gather information or to run ops? Have you ever heard of any person going underground in that type of an operation?

J: I can't say I have because I wasn't all that privy on sensitive stuff like that.

L: OK. Was it, did you ever, as head of Incomm, did you ever handle any intelligence that was scrambled? You know, covert operation or any intelligence operations that were scrambled and sent via Incomm, you know, like from the intelligence division in Germany to the intelligence division in the US? Did you ever see any intelligence traffic scrambled at all?

J: No. It was always just handwritten envelopes with your name on it. It said "Eyes Only, please destroy when you read." So it was never anything electronic.

L: They would never put any of the --

J: During in my time.

L: -- corporate operations into electronics. It was all hand delivered, hand written and then destroyed.

J: Right.

L: He would handle these courier packs?

J: Well, in RTC it was a person whose name was Jeff Schreiber or Gary L: . For the OSA network, when I was there, it was Ben Shaw who wrote reports. It was Lynn Farney that wrote reports.

L: So, they would have couriers taking these intelligence documents

J: to Author Services, to Mark Yeager at CMO Int, to me in RTC in LA.

L: To David Miscavige.

J: To David Miscavige also.

L: And they were hand written.

J: Not hand-written. Typed.

L: Typed. Now, were they written in such a way that you could read them in two ways. There was a code with names for different activities, like a B&E would be a breaking and enter. We called up. We're gonna do a Benny on this guy, or they were written in a way that you have to understand the code in the intelligence division so that if one of these couriers was stopped, then somebody couldn't read these and understand these.

J: They were written in a way that, unless you're familiar with Scientology and some of its Invest, I mean, you could read between the lines, but you know, they were written in such a way as to be as least incriminating as possible but to give you as much information as possible. Quite commonly, what would happen is from reading a report, if it was too scant or I didn't know about it or want to know more, I would just simply give it to the case officer and get the case file and could see the details.

L: And they'd tell you what was going on.

J: Right.

L: And was it, was there a lot of intelligence traffic going on around the world, data going back and forth.

J: I had it coming from Germany. I had it coming from England. I had it coming from Switzerland.

L: How often would these couriers bring in these packs?

J: It was never, you know, see a different courier. It would be the same people.

L: Same because they had to be totally trusted to carry this information.

J: Right. Would be the same people.

L: Would they go to Europe once a week? Once every two weeks?

J: No, I don't believe that's how it worked at all. The information, I'm not sure how the information came from other countries to my desk but I know I was receiving Canada, you know.

L: So, somehow it would get from these other countries to your desk and they wouldn't put it into computers, even encrypted. It was always typed up and then shredded and gone.

J: Right.

L: Okay. What's next on your list?

J: [Reading] "Scientology and/or its attorneys knowingly and deliberately using electronic eavesdropping or bugging against its adversaries." I think I mentioned a couple instances of this that I knew about earlier where, in the Bill & Holly Fennell, and also with David Mayo.

L: Bill & Holly Fennell were the Scientology ministers who David Miscavige ordered to have their bedroom bugged, their home bugged.

J: They were moved. A piece of furniture, a lamp that had a bugging device in it that was put in their room.

L: Why were they told they were moved?

J: Uh, because they were bad people.

L: They were getting lesser quarters as a punishment

J: Right.

L: And they were really being moved into a bugged apartment.

J: Right.

L: And it was you and someone else...

J: Rick Aznaran.

L: ...Rick Aznaran who were listening to them, spying on them illegally.

J: Right

L: And you would listen to your fellow ministers having sex because David Miscavige was afraid...

J: That they were plants.

L: ...That they were from another organization spying on Scientology.

J: Right.

L: Do you know if Scientology has ever found any real spies, a real spy that they knew for a fact was a member of the government, in Scientology? Have you ever --

J: No.

L: How many people have they sacrificed to their witch-hunts, do you estimate?

J: Countless.

L Name some people you know that have been bounced out as spies of Scientology, spies of, you know, spying on Scientology. They mostly worry about the government, right?

J: Yeah.

L: Who else, would --

J: I mean, that's where this whole rollback thing came from. I mean, they used to weekly, oh, it was such an insanity because, like, "Blah-dee-blah said, 'L. Ron Hubbard's ugly.'" "Well, where did you get that from?" "Well, I was in meeting and somebody said that he had a bad picture." You know, just this insane trail of dis-related things, trying to make it be related, and the person who comes down, you know, then the person who said it just gets fucking exploded.

L: What do you mean by "exploded", means --

J: Sec-checked, you know, work detail until they crack.

L: Did anyone ever admit, that you know of, of being a government spy in the history of all this punishment, and all these procedures to find government spies.

J: You know, no.

L: No one in the whole history of Scientology you have ever heard of?

J: No, none.

L: Do you think that the executives would have said, "We found so and so and we knew he was a government agent." Do you think that would have been, they would have bragged?

J: Oh, bragged on.

L: But in all of your years, you never heard one single person?

J: Something wrong with that e-meter. [Laughter.]

L: OK. Go on with the next one.

J: OK. [Reading] "OK, Scientology and/or its attorneys knowingly and deliberately recruiting, using, or doing anything, or reporting anything to get the fee, private investigators?" Again, and this is what I think, um, it's Gene Ingram.

L: How many people does Gene Ingram has working for him?

J: I, I don't know. Like I say, that is something that is so private, just between Marty and David Miscavige and maybe Lyman and maybe Norman, but just like, more, less people than on one hand -- had that kind, I mean, I was privy up to a point of sensitive information which I've mentioned here but stuff like that, no.

L: So, when the inevitable happens that either Norman Starkey or Lyman Spurlock or Marty Rathburn decides that they're not gonna take the rap for all these criminal charges...

J: Well, they're well-insulated.

L: ...and, uh, goes state's evidence, they have quite a tale to tell, don't they?

J: Yes they do. Especially Marty. Marty is the key because he came in there and got the baptism in fire and blood from the Diane & John Colletto incident.

L: He's just hardened.

J: Yeah.

L: Do you think that any one of these three: Spurlock, Starkey, or Rathburn, when it comes to them going to jail for a long time or giving up Miscavige, do you think any of those guys will eventually either leak, crack or turn state's evidence? Which of the three do you think is the most likely to not...

[SIDE OF TAPE ENDS]

L: The last question I asked is between Lyman Spurlock, Marty Rathburn and Norman Starkey --

J: The weakest link in that chain is Marty Rathburn and the reason he's the weakest link is because David Miscavige physically abuses him so much.

L: When you say physically abuses, you mean?

J: Beats him.

L: On a regular basis, he will hit this guy.

J: Yeah, and Marty's the one who's already blown from the organization, too. He's already tried to get away.

L: Marty has tried to get away, but Miscavige brought him back and the criminal, they have so much criminal activity on each other that they, Miscavige is worried that if this guy goes out.

J: Yeah.

L: So Marty has already blown. They just brought him back and broke him down and kept him there.

J: Put him through the RPF, on the ship, put him through OTIII, all that shit.

L: Poor Marty.

J: Poor Marty.

L: OK. Do you know where Marty Rathburn's parents are? Do you know where he comes from?

J: No.

L: Do you know anything about that?

J: No.

L: Where Lyman Spurlock's parents are?

J: No.

L: The parents may want to be contacted. It might help the transition for them to realize that they might have to start thinking about cutting a deal because there's a problem there.

Lyman, Marty, Norman Starkey, any idea of Norman Starkey's parents, where he came from?

J: South Africa.

L: South Africa. OK. Go on with the next one. Oh, we're talking about PI's. Do you know of any other PI firms besides Ingram that they use, any other PI firms?

J: No.

L: So it's really all done through Ingram. Does Ingram hire other firms around the country?

J: Yes, he does.

L: So he's running the whole show.

J: Yeah. Him and Marty.

L: How much money do you think has gone to Eugene Ingram.

J: Millions.

L: Millions. One PI firm is making millions of dollars?

J: One PI, yeah.

L: How many millions, when you were there?

J: I wouldn't know. I know that, you know, I don't know. In RTC, I think we probably dumped \$150,000 at one point and then started getting CSC to pay for it 'cause we didn't want to pay for it.

L: Covert operations. \$150,000 over how long?

J: Less than a year.

L: Less than a year. \$150,000. One organization. How many organizations could possibly be paying him besides RTC?

J: Uh, CSI, ASI.

L: Wow, that's a lot.

J: Yeah, he doing pretty good for himself, financially.

L: Do you know anything about Eugene Ingram's background?

J: This was very much on a need to know basis. This is something that was just kept like I say to just a very few people, unfortunately, no. Fortunately I was not one of them.

L: OK. All right. Let's go on with the next thing.

J: OK. [Reading] "Political activities such as opposing or proposing legislation, or opposing or supporting candidates. This could include such means as telling members to write congressmen or make donations to particular candidates or buying political influence for Scientology?" The only answer I have for this question is that sometime, I guess it was 1991, they were trying to get someone voted into office in Hemet and we were all rounded up and told about this and told for the specific candidate to go vote for him.

L: You were told by the church to vote for a specific candidate?

J: Yeah.

L: You were supposed to, you were literally supposed to vote for in Hemet, California.

J: Right. And they loaded us up on buses, we all went and voted for that person.

L: And you just did exactly what they told you to do, and did they ask you if you voted? Did they sec-check anyone to see if they voted, did they have any way of telling if you really voted for that person?

J: Well, yes. That person won.

L: That person won. So Scientology helped affect the outcome.

J: Mayor of San Jacinto I believe it was.

L: San Jacinto, is that a very big town?

J: No, little town.

L: A thousand people?

J: Yes. We'd go in there in buses and do whatever the hell they wanted to.

L: So you guys affected the political structure. It's illegal for a religion in the United States to involve itself in political lobbying. For anything like that, it loses its 501(3c) status. It cannot endorse candidates. What you're telling me here is that they violated their IRS promise to operate legally and they told you to vote for a certain candidate and that candidate won. How many people went in?

J: The whole base.

L: How many people is that? A hundred? 200?

J: 500 people.

L: 500 people were bussed into a town of a thousand people and voted for this person and got him elected.

J: Yes.

L: And you were ordered to vote for this. It was like, they were telling you what to do with your free vote.

J: Right.

L: Absolutely.

J: This happened a couple of times too. They had us do it, go down to Riverside, loaded us up on buses and vote for a person in Riverside.

L: Do you remember who that was?

J: No, this is when I was doing really bad. I mean, I was just like a spineless individual.

L: So 500 staff members go to Riverside and are ordered to vote for one person. Did you ever, ever vote, did they ever say go out and vote every year? Did you ever vote in your 17 years in Scientology?

J: That was my first time voting in my life.

L: So, they got you all registered, too?

J: Yes.

L: So they brought forms around to have you register before they told you who to vote for.

J: Yes.

L: Okay. So they were affecting political elections by controlling your votes?

J: Correct.

L: In Riverside County. Do you have any other knowledge of Scientology listing out candidates and giving out advises to the members to donate to those campaigns, like Sonny Bono or anyone like that? Any politicians that they ever mentioned, that they really liked certain politicians?

J: I recall two times going out and doing the voting, and my memory of that isn't good at all.

L: Do you know of any instances of Scientology giving politicians money secretly through law firms or lobbying agents or anything like that?

J: No.

L: Anything like that. OK. Keep going.

J: OK. [Reading] "Using any of its tax-free income or assets to destroy individuals or organizations as perceived as fair game?" I believe we've covered that.

L: OK.

J: [Reading] "Any fraud or false statement on any applications to the IRS to obtain 501(c)(3) non-profit exemption or on Scientology tax returns?" I think I've already covered that.

L: Covered that.

J: [Reading] "Scientology or its agents exercising any undo influence over IRS investigations or decision-makers including such things as using former IRS employees with inside knowledge to negotiate with the IRS?" OK. Now there is something on this particular point. A former person, a person that worked with IRS that they would not say who it was when they were doing this 501(c)(3).

L: They had someone inside the IRS working with them to help them create a 501(c)(3).

J: Right. And a person outside, a former employee of the IRS.

L: Was his name Meade Emory?

J: That sounds familiar.

L: The former employee of the IRS.

J: That sounds familiar.

L: But what you're saying here is, while they were negotiating their 501(c)(3), an employee from the IRS was secretly helping Scientology do this thing.

J: Correct. Right.

L: And they wouldn't talk about who it was.

J: No. They emphatically would not even say anything about it.

L: Who?

J: Marty and David Miscavige.

L: Marty and David Miscavige had an employee inside the IRS helping them get this billion-dollar tax give-away?

J: Yes.

L: What made you believe that they had someone inside the IRS?

J: Because they said it. Just like we're talking here, they said, "We have a person that used to work there, and we have a person that's there now helping us do this."

L: Was it Marty or David Miscavige who said they had someone inside the IRS that was helping them get the 501(c)(3)?

J: I believe it was David Miscavige.

L: David Miscavige. Anything else?

J: It was the biggest damn secret, I mean they only said it once, you know, at a meeting, after a meeting. What I recall is that we had just been meeting on several things and we were sitting worrying about this IRS thing, and then David and Marty, they just started talking.

L: For twenty-five years, the IRS has turned down Scientology's applications, and all of a sudden in a secret agreement, they give them tax status and forgive a billion dollars, David Miscavige estimated a billion dollars in taxes. No one can understand how this happened.

J: It was an inside thing.

L: What about, the IRS agents have complained that they were getting harassing phone calls and one's working on the case, at home. I believe some stated they lost pets. Their pets disappeared.

J: Now see, I wouldn't have knowledge of that but I've heard about that it happened.

L: It's only what you know to be fact. These are reports we've received at FACTNet.

J: OK.

L: What's next on your list?

J: [Reading] "That all Scientology related corporations are controlled by one unified management and that separation between corporations is a sham and mere instrumentality?" We talked about that.

L: OK. What's next?

J: [Reading] "100. Anyone who has exerted undue, unfair, disproportionate influence over Scientology's assets, trust, or reserve accounts from other Scientology-related corporations over one of these corporations to buy books, products..?" That's the Fran Hurst story. OK. [Reading] "101. Any trustee or fiduciary for one Scientology trust or corporation who was posted or removed by an officer or executive from a different Scientology-related corporation?" Well, you know, that whole thing that kind of went down that I was involved in it in 1987 was pretty much the way this happened. Author Services came and removed, you know, David Miscavige and Norman Starkey were trustees of the Religious Technology Center, so they came from Author Services and did this removal, you know. But it's a just a sham any way you look at it, you know. There were certain people that ran Scientology. David Miscavige first. Me and Vicky Aznaran kind of even because she was a woman and wasn't that well-liked. Mike Yeager, Marty Rathburn, supporting people. Lyman Spurlock, also a strong player. Beyond that, it falls into, everyone else who no matter who or what they're called just takes orders. And that's the way it is. [Reading] "Any secret or non-secret intent, meetings, or actions by Scientology to convey the substantial portion of its assets out of any of its corporations, especially the Church of Scientology of California while a lawsuit of considerable amount is pending?" What I recall about this as being in a meeting with Marty Rathburn where they were talking about the Wollersheim judgment and how, at the same time in conjunction with the IRS, they were restructuring, and it was said that CSC, at best, would be left with \$2 million and there was no way that Wollersheim could get his judgment. I mean, it just wouldn't be there.

L: OK So they deliberately moved the money so that they wouldn't have to pay the judgment.

J: Right.

L: Anything else on that?

J: Also, in the banks at Liechtenstein. When the threat of the IRS was there, money was poured into... It was researched out to find a country that wouldn't be subject to US laws and Cyprus, Cyprus is what it was, and a lot of money was put in Cyprus. A staff money

was put there and I mean, at that time, they were having like a civil war over there, killing and on and on. It was just madness!

L: And they still put all the money into Cyprus because they felt the government could never get it.

J: Right. Now, the details of that I do not know.

L: Let me ask you a question. Say, David Miscavige and his top four people start to feel the heat and that they're gonna go to jail. Who controls those accounts? Do they control these hundreds of millions of dollars?

J: Yes.

L: Could they leave the country and take all Scientology's assets with them?

J: Scientology's assets is spread far beyond the United States. As a matter of fact, I don't believe its major holdings are even in the United States.

L: Is Scientology's major assets in stocks, bonds, and investments or is it in real estate, or is it about equal?

J: I think the vast majority is cold, hard cash.

L: Cold hard cash.

J: Right. Money.

L: Who knows how much money? Who are the people who know how much money is--

J: In Scientology? Mark Ingber. Bill Price. Wendel Reynolds probably had a very good idea when he was the finance dictator. Um, Mike Yeager would have had a very good idea.

L: So these people, obviously David Miscavige.

J: Yeah, David Miscavige.

L: Marty Rathburn, probably.

J: Yeah.

L: Would know the total amount of money. These are not people who know where these accounts are?

J: Right. There's another lady. Maureen somebody.

L: Are these accounts in the name of the Church of Scientology or could they be in other names?

J: They could be in other names.

L: So, Miscavige and these people could take off and the only people who would know where the money is --

J: And just have the secret accounts and all the codes, yes.

L: And nobody knows how --

J: Maria Brigotti.

L: Maria Brigotti.

J: Another heavy duty player.

L: But a few people know where all the money is.

J: Yes.

L: And they're the people controlling the money.

J: Right.

L: Are there any checks and balances, you know, outside of those people?

J: None whatsoever.

L: So, the government doesn't know. The Scientologists don't know. If there was a catastrophe and they were all killed, nobody would know where the money even was.

J: They'd have to dig it up.

L: If they were all in a plane accident, for example.

J: The money could be traced but I think it would take a couple years, couple of years.

L: You think they have hidden accounts?

J: Yes!

L: That they don't want anyone to know exist?

J: Yes.

L: And who would be the signatories on these?

J: More than likely, Miscavige himself. Or his wife. You know, he uses people that are very close to him or that have acknowledged that he's some kind of strange deity, and he uses those people. And lawyers.

L: So they probably have some lawyers that are shilling these accounts.

J: Yeah.

L: Have we finished all those things?

J: Yes.

L: Let me ask you a couple other things. How would you describe David Miscavige the person?

J: A very scared individual, a very unsure individual. I've had, I mean, I've talked to him. He's, he's like this: either he's totally uncertain of himself or he's totally certain of evil and he's on a vendetta. When he's demonstrating power and making decisions and showing authority, he's certain. But just to talk to him in those moments when, you know, there's not reason to do all of that, he's just a very uncertain, unsure person. He wants to know what you think. "Well, what do you think about this or what do you think about that? Well, I was uncertain." I mean, it's amazing to see the spectrum of his character as a little, afraid, unsure person to a monster.

L: Would you describe it as two different personalities?

J: A few different personalities, yes. Multiple personalities.

L: Would you say that he's mentally sound? I mean, when you look at it now?

J: I think he needs medication.

L: Do you think he has some sort of underlying imbalance?

J: Yes.

L: Is it a chemical imbalance?

J: Psychological imbalance. Because the only way he knows how to, I mean, you know, the most simple situation, the only way he knows how to act is with extreme force that overwhelms whatever is opposing him. And whether it be mental, physical, whatever. That's the only way he knows how to respond to a threat. And I'm talking about

something like a damn mouse running around the room. He would have people in the room with 22's trying to kill the damn thing.

L: A little mouse?

J: Yes.

L: That actually happened.

J: No, I'm just giving an analogy of what I think about his character. How overboard he goes over any kind of threat or opposition.

L: What would you describe his spiritual nature? What is his nature?

J: I think he has none at all. I think he's just a seriously deprived individual. What he's been deprived of is the common human experience where people love each other, share with each other, where empathy actually exists, where people will actually do something if someone else is hurt, you know, reach a hand out or do something, or involve themselves in the community. He has no concept of these things. He's a second generation Scientologist. His father was a Scientologist, ignored the children, screamed at them, treated them like puppets and toys, you know 'cause he. I mean, him and his brothers stand on their hands and do all these little tricks. They still do this today. They're grown men. But his father's pretty psychotic as well. Prone to extreme bursts of rage to low depression, you know. And then L. Ron Hubbard is the same way so it seems like David Miscavige has walked in the shadow of insanity all his life and that's the only way he knows how to act.

L: What are the rest of his family members like? I was told he has, had some twin sisters, one of them committed suicide.

J: I've never met them. I only know his brother and his father. I really don't know the rest of his family.

L: Where do the rest of them live? Where does the rest of his family live?

J: Loretta, God where does she live, somewhere on the east coast. His mother.

L: She has nothing to do with Scientology anymore.

J: I don't know whether or not she does or not. I know he constantly pulls her in and gets her ethics counseling. And she gets special treatment at the ship whenever something goes wrong, fly her to the ship, then take care of Loretta.

L: So do you think she pays for that auditing?

J: No.

L: So he's giving his family special free auditing.

J: Yeah, I think so.

L: She has no contract as a staff member.

J: No, refuses to be on the staff.

L: He's using the resources of Scientology for his personal gain and advantage.

J: Correct. And then his brother who works at Int management, Ron Miscavige, who also left Scientology at one point and they kind of begged him to come back. And he came back and he went and started some WISE business. And then his father. Those are the ones that I know.

L: He has a sister.

J: I hear he has a couple of them but I never met either one of them.

L: They've never been around, never showed up, nothing. Tell me about, you mentioned a little bit about Rick L: .

J: Gary L: .

L: Gary L: .

J: He's an ex-GO person that has always been in intelligence, always been doing ops long before I even had a clue that the church did that shit, and he was in the Scientology...

L: He went in the GO before the OSA.

J: Yeah.

L: And he was in intelligence in the GO before the OSA.

J: Him and Jeff Schreiber.

L: So, when Scientology made this public statement that they disbanded the GO, all those people were dismissed, they don't do that anymore, two of the top intelligence people from the GO --

J: And Ben Shaw --

L: -- and Ben Shaw are now the top intelligence people at your time, are the top intelligence people.

J: Right.

L: Another complete sham.

J: Right. Nothing's changed.

L: Nothing's changed.

J: No.

L: What other GO people are high ranking in the OSA or the intelligence division of Scientology?

J: Well, I knew Klaus and Edith Buchell, who were ex-GO people that were...

L: In the OSA.

J: Yeah, in the OSA. A woman named Cathy somebody, not Cat Moro either, but another woman that kind of had buck teeth and short blonde hair. Oh, I can't remember her ding dang name. But as a matter of fact, the whole entirety of the OSA network was majorly staffed with ex-GO people or people that worked for ex-GO people that were in these external units executing GO. They bought in, you know. It's the same thing. It's the same people.

L: The people who went to jail, Artie Merin and Henning Heldt, I think Henning went to jail.

J: Mm-hmm.

L: Aren't they back working inside the OSA undercover again, working with Scientology, do you know?

J: I believe Henning Heldt is. I've heard that name come up.

L: OK. Marty or someone mentioned it?

J: Yeah. But like I say, I was not privy to that super high level kind of thing.

L: He was one of those people that went to jail, and they said they had disavowed and would never be back in Scientology.

J: I remember they were doing something with Jane Kember after she got out.

L: So, Jane Kember after she got out of jail got back involved with-

J: the Church doing something.

L: The OSA, or just the Church?

J: OSA.

L: Back with the intelligence division. The former head of the worldwide intelligence agency who they disavowed was now brought back in undercover into the OSA. And this is the, you realize that David Miscavige, almost every time, or Heber, they get up and they'd say, you know, "Those were the old days. We don't do that."

J: I know the party line. I know it all too well.

L: This is quite humorous.

J: It's disgusting me, actually. I'm starting to get disgusted.

L: Let me ask you about Gary L: . Any criminal acts you remember Gary L: personally involved in?

J: Well, the bugging which resulted in the TRO against RTC and CSC over that David Mayo property.

L: OK.

J: Oh, the getting of the documents from them in the financial records.

L: He stole the financial records.

J: He had his operatives do it.

L: He was involved in the stealing of financial records from the reformed church of David Mayo.

J: Right.

L: Anything else you know about criminal activity he was involved in?

J: Beyond that specifically, no.

L: How about Rick Aznaran?

J: Shredding documents, attempted planting of drugs, illegal drugs on John Nelson, bugging, the staff member bugging. He's the one that got the bugging equipment so we could do Bill & Holly Fennell. Also the bugging equipment that was employed on John Nelson in his room.

L: They bugged John Nelson?

J: Yeah.

L: Was he still in the Church?

J: No, he was out at this time.

L: Do you know of any other staff members who've been bugged while they were members of the Church of Scientology?

J: Beyond those that I've mentioned, I don't.

L: Anything else Rick Aznaran was involved in? Criminal?

J: Beyond what I said, I don't.

L: How about Terry Gamboa. What did she do?

J: As far as facts, I have none. But I think Terri was very much instrumental in the raping and pillaging of the orgs in this minimum book stock order and making sure that those -- She was the executive director of Author Services for awhile, quite awhile. Norman Starkey was her junior. So all of the criminality and separateness of corporations, she was very much involved in that.

L: So, if I understand correctly, they were ordering the orgs to write them out big checks for all these books that they were being forced to buy.

J: Which they couldn't even often deliver because they hadn't even been manufactured. It was a joke.

L: So the money would go to ASI and then a lot of this money was going to overseas bank accounts out of ASI and RTC.

J: Well I didn't say that.

L: I was just asking. So, where did it go once it would go to ASI, all this cash?

J: My understanding is it went into an account L. Ron Hubbard had, his personal finances. Because Author Services represented him.

L: Do you know about the e-meter L. Ron Hubbard being paid between 20 and 60 million dollars for an e-meter that he didn't invent, in royalties, that was bought from him? His supposed inventor's royalties were bought from him by Scientology to channel 25 to 60 million dollars to him? Do you know anything about that?

J: No.

L: You know, we've talked about a lot of stuff. Is there anything else that you've seen Miscavige or Starkey or any of these top people of Scientology, is there anything in Scientology that you, now that you start looking from the outside that we haven't talked about, that you see as particularly cruel or ruthless, you know, just really mean to another human being, just viciousness?

J: I talked to you about the incident about when it rained the entire staff was put in lower conditions, because there was a thunderstorm.

L: Because it rained outside. Miscavige said that they had to be more in control of things. Because it rained.

J: Yeah.

L: That's what I call kind of crazy, any other crazy stuff like that?

J: [Long pause] He would turn off the lights and grab girls.

L: He would? David Miscavige?

J: Yeah.

L: What do you mean by grabbing? Grab them in a sexual way?

J: Yeah. They would scream and squeal.

L: Grab their breasts? Grab their asses?

J: Wherever. Wherever.

L: You saw this occur?

J: I'd see them running around and of course they would kind of stop that. But then I would have to patch up the people that he did it to. Terry Gamboa and Joanie Labacky, you know, just physically having their way with these women.

L: Did they have sex with him?

J: I couldn't say. I know that there was some witness though, that Norman was supposed to be watching and she ended up giving him a blow job. And Norman ended up having to do lower conditions.

L: Some witness.

J: Yes.

L: Some witness in a Scientology case?

J: Yes, and he was watching her in a room because people were looking for her, whatever. She ended up blowing him in there.

L: So he had to do lower conditions for that. They were keeping her separate?

J: In a hotel room, yeah.

L: So that she couldn't be a witness?

J: No, she was being prepared.

L: When they prepare witnesses, were you ever prepared by Scientology attorneys?

J: Oh absolutely.

L: Did they ever say to you, did they ever say anything to imply that you don't have to tell the truth?

J: I remember them specifically saying, "Don't say it like that. Say it like this." But the specifics of it, I couldn't tell you because I've been prepared so many times, you know, with the lawyer and the questions and you know, you need to get it right.

L: They would drill you on the correct answers.

J: Right.

L: Who would give you these answers, the attorneys or, or, I mean, were they your answers or were they --

J: Answers, no. Like, I remember Earle Cooley definitely being there during some of the drilling, "Don't say this. Say that."

L: They were telling you what not to say.

J: Right.

L: Even if it was the truth, they would tell you not to say it.

J: Right.

L: Earle Cooley instructed you not to tell the truth.

J: Right.

L: And he said, "Just don't give this answer"?

J: Yeah but you see, I can't say in specifics because I was being prepared for that RICO case and I was being prepared for days. I was up all night at Author Services. You say, now what do they have to do with the RICO suit? Nothing. But we're up. Joe Yanny fell asleep there up all night. Earle Cooley was up, you know, just being prepared. Marty was the one doing the questioning and saying, "Now, you know, you say it like this. You do this. You do that. Hold it, let me check with the attorneys. Should he say, now if they say this, what should he say? No, don't say that, say this." That type of thing.

L: Did you ever know what they were telling you was false? That they were telling you to say it even though it was false?

J: My state of mind at that time was say what you had to say to win.

L: Whatever you have to say to win, whatever they tell you to say, say it.

J: And learn it and say it well.

L: Do you think this is a common practice with everyone who Scientology, any Scientology staff member or executive is drilled on what to say, literally told what to say whether it's true or not?

J: Sure.

L: You know of anyone else who was ever drilled like this?

J: Ray Mithoff, Warren McShane.

L: And they're told, you know, "You say what we tell you to say" and that's it.

J: "This is what they'll probably ask you and this is the deal, so this is what you say. Here it is right here."

L: Did they ever have anything typed up that want you to say, like a script?

J: No. They were careful not to do that.

L: Did you know -- in one sense, you knew that you were doing what you had to do to win.

J: Right.

L: OK.

J: In other words, I'll tell you a specific. I'll tell you a specific relating to Earle Cooley. When we had the stolen materials from David Mayo's group that was gotten by Bob Mithoff, and then I was being drilled.

L: On the stolen material?

J: Yeah, comparing them to these materials. Then I asked the question, I said, "What do I say when they ask where I got these materials from?" And Earle Cooley said, "Just say some church person dropped them off or gave them to us."

L: Did Earle Cooley know they were stolen when he said that to you?

J: Yes. Yes.

L: So Earle Cooley --

J: He said, "You don't know. Somebody dropped them off on the steps."

L: So Earle Cooley, an officer of the court is drilling you on stolen materials that he knows are stolen by the Church of Scientology and he's telling you to say, you don't know. Somebody might have dropped them off on the steps. What made you think that Earle Cooley knew that these were stolen materials?

J: Because he knew where the hell we got them from. Because I discussed it. I said, "You know we got these materials on the Invest lines. What do I say if I'm asked?"

L: So he knew that you had obtained those illegally because you told him you obtained them illegally, and he told you to lie.

J: Yeah, he said, "What do you mean? You found those on the steps."

L: OK. Any other Scientologists or any other executives you know that have been drilled by attorneys.

J: It's a common practice. It would probably take me some amount of days to go through my mind and try to figure out specific examples like I just did there.

L: Would it be fair to say that no Scientology executive goes on the stand without intense drilling sessions?

J: Or staff member, exactly.

L: Or staff member, where they're told what to say?

J: For days.

L: For days.

J: Yes.

L: Have you ever heard of a staff member or executive saying, "You know, that's not true. I can't do that"? Have you ever heard anything like that? What would happen if a staff member said-

J: Off with your head! You just-

L: You'd go into lower conditions and punished.

J: You would be disappear and be tortured until you came to your damn senses

L: To do what they told you to do. So basically, would it be fair to say that Scientology trains its people to commit perjury on the stand?

J: Yes.

L: And that Scientology's attorneys participate in this perjury?

J: Yes.

L: Knowingly participate in instructing the staff to tell lies.

J: Right. Nothing like a good drilled witness. You know, they're predictable.

L: OK. Why don't we save something for tomorrow and do some exercise? What do you think about that?

[BREAK]

L: Which one did you read? You read that one.

J: Mm-hmmm. It's the 27th.

L: This is Lawrence Wollersheim and Jesse Prince. Today is August 27th. Jesse just read a document called, what's the title? Pervasive Pretext of Religion in Scientology. I have some questions, Jesse, about when you were in Scientology. They call themselves a religion and according to our Constitution, any person with any set of beliefs can call themselves a religion. It doesn't matter if you're a neo-Nazi group, you know, an Aryan Church teaching hate of Blacks and Jews and you call yourself a religion. It doesn't matter if you're a, you know, organization that believes in prostitution of children. You can believe anything you want and set up a religion around any belief in the United

States. We have very liberal laws so it's, you know, religion is anything. There are Satanic churches, lots of Satanic churches. They have 501(c)(3) status and they're entitled according to our laws to be a religion.

J: Right.

L: What I'm curious about is, when you were in Scientology, did any of the people profess in God, in the management? Did people believe in any God that you know of from your experience?

J: I'll just start from the beginning on that question. In 1976, when I first joined the Church, ooh, let me stop saying that, when I first joined Scientology, I myself was quite a religious person with a long religious background. I've been a Catholic. I've gone to Catholic schools from first 'til eighth grade. I've been an altar boy. I've been baptized. I've been confirmed. I've done all the major mass ceremonies as an altar boy and had a basic very strong conviction in God as a Creator and Person with divine force over man and everything else that we live in. So, I believe at one point I was even gonna go be a priest. The only attraction of Scientology for me when I first got into it was the religious aspect, the concept of a non-denominational religion that could bring different and all religions together, and introduce a new way of thinking, or a new science, or a new technology, or a new way of approaching the Divine, was what I perceived as going on. And Dianetics was like a window into the soul that would help you become more aware of this spiritual nature of yourself. This was prior to receiving any auditing. You know, as time went on, I didn't have a whole lot of Dianetics, thank God, but I never myself sincerely contacted past life events or things of a nature that if I looked at had any kind of effect on me that made a difference in my life after looking at it. In other words, they were just kind of like things that were kind of interesting, getting into these altered states, mild hypnotic trance-like states. All these kind of things, you know, but then what I found odd was there was never any kind of service whatsoever concerning religion in Scientology. In other words, there was never a day set aside to acknowledge humanity, everything that's here.

L: You don't get a day off to worship?

J: None whatsoever. There is no, not one single prayer in the religion whatsoever, and I actually asked someone when I was on the EPF, when is the damn church service? And I was just straight bluntly told, "We don't have any church services. We don't have any prayers. We don't have anything like that."

L: Did that ever change?

J: No, never. And at that point, I'm thinking, where is the religion? Well, between me having that thought, I had pretty much decided that this is something else going on here in Scientology that I do not want to be a part of. I had pretty much decided I was gonna get away. This was within the first three months, two and a half months of being in the

Sea Org. At which point, I was just gotten by a bunch of people because I said I wanted to leave and was just forcibly incarcerated for about 18 months.

L: You were put on the RPF.

J: Yes, put on the RPF.

L: You said you wanted to leave.

J: Right. I said I wanted nothing to do with this. And it had nothing to do with religion at that time. In my mind, I had pretty much made up my mind that I had made a bad choice. But then, through this process of auditing which you happen to get on the RPF, you just kinda get sprinkles of little things that seem interesting, sprinkles of something that's insightful. And then you're constantly audited and in a highly suggestible state is that, I now realize, is kinda like being pulled along very slightly to the point where now I might as well just be here and see what this is about now. Maybe it's not so bad, you know? This is after getting a lot of auditing. The first 18 months in Scientology for me, the incarceration and Dianetics which is majorly what I got. Then I got out. I went in '76, got out in '79. And right around that time period, L. Ron Hubbard came out with this Dianetic Clear, Natural Clear, Clear this, Clear that. So, when I actually got out of Scientology, out of RPF, I pretty much immediately went onto their higher levels. They had a process, quad grades, where they asked you four questions for each grade, and I just wrapped them up in two days.

L: Let me ask a question kind of directing to where I think you're going, is, did the executives of Scientology believe, the people at the top of Scientology believe in God, any kind of God that you saw?

J: Well, let me get to that.

L: OK.

J: I'll get to that, OK? The next thing that happened after I finished these quickie grades in Scientology, is I did OT I. Now, this is really secret stuff here now. I do this OT I, and it's basically like a walking around class noticing things and being able to audit yourself. OK. Finished that, it was like a real nothing kind of event. Then OT II, these dichotomies. Now, these are the things that nearly made me crazy. A list of these dichotomies, just concepts, good/bad, hot/cold, and then lines that intersect them. These were like thought processes. It seems like to me these are kind of like a fundamental way that people kind of thought of things but the detail that was being added to it elicited certain reactions. Like I would get hot, I would be afraid, you know, all of these, you know think of it, these crazy ass things. Now the kicker, I remember the day when I got that OTIII pack and read this crazy story about space invaders and all of this stuff. And this was like, I was already reading L. Ron Hubbard's science fiction anyway and thought that it was nowhere as good as Heinlein or something like that, you know. It was just very mediocre. But then there was that line in there that said there is no such thing as

God. There is no such thing as the devil. It's all just an implant. At that moment, I thought, Well then, what is the deal with this religion? I mean, I became severely confused and upset about that whole concept that someone would say that it would take me being in Scientology now for two and a half damn years, for them to tell me, "Oh, there ain't no God. There ain't no devil. It's just a bunch of crap."

[END OF TAPE]

Tape 6, August 27, 1998

Lawrence Wollersheim and Jesse Prince

J: I became severely kind of upset at that point and actually left the OTIII course and, they get you back in there. You have to do it anyway, but as part of doing this, which I don't think is really recognized or is said for what it is, when you read this information, you're not allowed to speak to anyone about it, they make you sign. So it's not like you go and do a course and then you go to your peers and say, "Hey, look, you know. I just did this." That was expressly forbidden. So you kind of keep this inside. This was something that was kind of festering. Now, the next thing that I did, and that was the next time that I ever ran into a religious issue in Scientology -- mostly it was, "No, this is a religion. No, this is not about religion." Then I did that OTIV where I actually went into such a severe altered state of consciousness to the point where I thought I was actually gonna die. Just talking about it now, I get a big headache. These were really obscure concepts and now that I myself have had a chance to read Aleister Crowley and different things, I can see that that's where this was coming from. It was very much demonic in nature. Demonic concepts with using your mind to go and out and control people, separating universes, all of this kind of crazy stuff.

L: Black magic?

J: Yeah, kind of magic, doing magic. Then, culminating into, old OTV was another walk around and tell people to do this, that, and actually practice things, control over people without them knowing it 'til the point of when I did the old OTVI (this was before all this NOTs and all this other crazy stuff), that part of the proof that you had to bring in order to say that you finished old OTVI was to leave your body, go to another country, and have someone mail you a postcard because you were effectively in their head. You're doing remote viewing. This kind of stuff. Several people lost their minds, utterly, totally, and completely on the courses that I was on and they were whisked away, and I've never seen or heard from them again.

L: Do you remember any of their names?

J: No. There were a couple people.

L: That went psychotic on the levels, on these... OK.

J: By the time I reached that old OTVI, which is not what OTVI is today in Scientology, I was a basket case. As a coincidence, as an incredible coincidence, next thing you know, here comes this NOTs now, this NOTs rundown, NED for OTs, which was positioned like, if you had trouble with these old levels, then we know exactly why and you just come in here and you get this NED for OTs. Well, I myself was extremely unstable after doing the OTVI. I mean, I was having a difficult time telling this reality versus something I'm imagining or whatever. I mean, I was just like crossing back and forth.

L: Did you ever get a postcard from a foreign country?

J: No, I never could do that.

L: So you couldn't attest that you'd completed OTVI.

J: Uh-uh. And I told them I didn't do it.

L: Did you ever hear of anyone who did get a postcard from a foreign country.

J: The only thing that I saw was people who attested to OTVI, and who, and how, and all that shit, I don't know.

L: You think they really did get a postcard from a foreign country?

J: You know, I'm not even gonna speculate on that but I will state as fact is what happened to me, when I was doing old OTIV. Now old OTVI, you've seen these materials before?

L: Yeah

J: Where you have to lay with your head pointed magnetic north and you kind of do this chanting and all this other kind of stuff, right? To get into this altered state. What did happen to me is I did that with the intention of moving out of my body, which actually happened and I went. I was upstairs on the fourth floor when I was going up in this ritual, day after day, to learn to exteriorize, and it actually happened and I went outside and the fucking building, I was four stories up. I had this bad fear of heights. I mean, it's less than it is now but shit, I look down and I'm four stories off the ground. Nothing holding on. Well, I immediately came back to this level of consciousness with the most severe headache and I think that, in my opinion, those things that L. Ron Hubbard has to create that effect is something that's been around for the millennium. I mean, every, someone else has discovered it's in the Vedic Hymns, you know, it's in Buddhism, this whole concept of exteriorization and all that kind of stuff. But the way it was done in Scientology, I have since come to understand, has more to do with magic than a more scientific thing.

L: OK. Was the belief in Scientology that, when you said, God and Devil were an implant, does that mean they're some kind of an aberration?

J: Yeah, religion is screwed up. It's just a false thing to enslave people.

L: That was the secret knowledge about religion in Scientology, that religion was a false thing to enslave people?

J: Right. And I even read, and I've listened to those Philadelphia doctoral course tapes, quite a bit. And yes, it goes into that, how horrid religion is. And then what shocked me is when that damn OTVIII came up. Now people don't realize there are different versions of that OTVIII. There's one version that one person saw that was just a one-page thing that kinda gave some prophecies. And what they saw was obviously incomplete. But I was there in the Church when they did the whole thing with the -- what am I saying, church? -- Scientology -- when they did the whole thing with the compilation of the original OTVIII, how they screen people so hard, when they got the ship about that other stuff. And then they issued something on OTVIII, which I never saw myself but I do know that the first people that did OTVIII, within the first three and half months, those materials were gotten away and they were changed, and they were issued again because there was a big problem with what people were reading. Now, I had a personal conversation with David Miscavige about this. He didn't want to tell me specifically what was in the pipe but he told me there was some information in there that was very startling and very rude that may very well upset people considerably. This was before OTVIII was... that first thing. So he told me there was something very bad in there that he was trying to grapple with. He had uncertainty and was like, "God, I don't even know if I want to say this." OK, and then it came out that some people were horribly upset. I mean, horribly upset.

L: Do you know any of the first OTVIII people that did the original OTVIII before they changed it?

J: Not really. I just remember, a man, a European man that was a complete basket case from the ship and I know that a lot of the people, not a lot of the people but it had had many complaints about that and then when they changed it, it smoothed out. Now, I'm gonna give my theory about that. The very first issue that came out was one of these representations that I have since seen out of the Church, where L. Ron Hubbard goes into this whole thing about how he is Satan, how he had a part in all of this, in the Book of Revelations. Then there's other ones that don't say that he is Satan but say something else, but what is common amongst all the OTVIII documents that I have seen is the slander of Jesus Christ, being a pedophile, a lover of little boys, and a slander on religion. So even if you minus the controversy about whether or not L. Ron Hubbard said he was Satan, there's other threads that run through all the documents that are common that makes it obvious who he thinks he is and what he thinks about Jesus Christ. And on one hand denies it ever happened and then on the other hand, said he's a pedophile.

L: Does Hubbard ever call religion an aberration? Does he ever come out and say that this is something that needs to be audited out of people?

J: Yeah. Yeah. In the Philadelphia Doctorate Course tapes.

L: He talks about auditing out?

J: Yeah.

L: You remember seeing that when you were at Scientology?

J: Hearing it. And seeing it.

L: Did the top executives in Scientology believe in God?

J: No. Well, you know, again, the ones...

L: Marty Rathburn, Lyman Spurlock, Norman Starkey and David Miscavige.

J: Again, back to a conversation with David Miscavige when I first came to the base, to the Hemet location in 1982. I don't recall exactly what we were doing or what the circumstances is, but he came to me and he said, "Hey, look, you know there's no such thing as God, don't you? You know that LRH said there ain't no God. It's just all a damn implant. There is no God. We don't believe in God here." This is something he personally said to me in private, we were doing something. Now, the flip side of that -- I've had another personal experience where they were waiting for a decision, some kind of a court- it was a Portland court decision. I was there, I was there, Lyman was there, Norman was there, Ray Mithoff was there, Marty was there. We were standing waiting on the decision, and I recall David Miscavige saying, "You know, there ain't no God, but in case there is a God, I pray that we get a good decision there." You see, he has had in that same doubt what I've seen him express at that time was the same manifestation that I sought with him when they were putting out their first issue of the OTVIII stuff. I think he personally has issues with that himself, but I think he's definitely way to the dark side, but in his heart he has issues with it.

L: So, he himself, the head of Scientology, was visibly upset by the content of the original OTVIII?

J: Yeah, he was shaking his head like, "Man, I don't even know if we can put this stuff out."

L: Let me just bring something up here. So, there were two OTVIIIs. The first one was released to a group of people over three and half months, and people were freaking out and reacting very, very badly to it.

J: Right.

L: Then another version came out.

J: Without fanfare.

L: They didn't announce a change.

J: No!

L: People didn't know that they'd gone from one OTVIII to another.

J: Right. It was just like revised, you know. Just some corrections and I believe that that part was then stripped out. Because it became more palatable.

L: Kind of secretly revised and then the new version came out.

J: Right. Right. Without fanfare.

L: Nobody knew, except maybe the CS, Miscavige-

J: And the people that were directly involved on the ship and maybe someone who had done it earlier. You know, they got that patched up, but it was done in such a way, it was like, "Damn it. We knew it before we released it and now it's happened. Let's clean it up."

L: And Bob Mithoff was the one who wrote this...

J: Ray Mithoff.

L: Ray Mithoff, from L. Ron Hubbard's notes, allegedly.

J: Pat Broeker was involved in it, too.

L: Pat Broeker was involved.

J: David Miscavige was involved.

L: Involved in it, so --

J: Those were the three people that were involved, and maybe Jeff Walker.

L: Is there anyone that you could think of, other than Broeker and Miscavige and Jeff Walker, who would be able to look... There's a document, the original OTVIII, that's been circulated, that talks about Hubbard saying he's the Antichrist, that Lucifer's really misunderstood, that document. Is there anybody other than those people who could verify that possibly that document is what everyone claims the original OTVIII before it was

altered, which Scientology wildly denies, that the OTVIII is anything like that? Well, maybe they're denying it because they changed the document.

J: Right.

L: There, there are people who have left Scientology who had access to it, and they won't surface and name themselves. They're terrified.

J: Yeah. It's a terrifying thing. When you gave me this, I felt sick.

L: And they stated that this was the original OTVIII.

J: The one with the Antichrist stuff in it?

L: Yeah.

J: Well, then that goes along with what I told you.

L: But that's what they said, that they will not surface out of fear and publicly name themselves as being aware that this was the document that they were there...

J: I've seen a man that said he wanted nothing else to do with Scientology, a European man. He said, "Fuck Scientology." He was like upset.

L: You mean, a guy who had gone all the way up to OTVIII and saw the document and decided that--

J: Freaked out.

L: --freaked out and decided to leave Scientology.

L: That document does have the content that would do that to someone.

J: It has severe impact.

L: If you think of anyone who can verify that document, who could've or would've seen the original document before they changed OTVIII. Most people theorized they changed OTVIII. You're the first person that has ever verified it, that there were two OTVIIIs.

J: I'm not even verifying it because I said I can't give you this or that. I just tell you what I saw, what I've seen. I've lived the history when this was happening.

L: OK.

J: But because I wasn't finished with OTVII, I wasn't privy. Of course, David Miscavige wasn't either, but that's neither here nor there. He's the issue authority over anything in

the church. Because I talked to him about this. We discussed this. I said, "Well, I want to see it." He said, "No, you can't see it. And I have to see it because I'm issue authority. I don't want to see it either." That's how we engaged in the conversations, like, "Man. What's in here is gonna blow people's minds." He was like, "It blew my mind." It wasn't like a happy thing. It was like, "Man! We've never had anything like this before."

L: He had an intense reaction to it.

J: Very intense reaction. He didn't even want nothing to damn do with OTVIII was the feeling I got from him. It's like, "This is a mistake" or "This is beyond anything even I would have thought of, to now put this on the public." This is what I'm now feeling from him.

L: Did he say anything to that nature?

J: He just said, "I don't know what's gonna happen when we put this out." He was hesitant.

L: Right.

J: He did not want to do it.

L: Scientology says it's compatible with Christianity. Every time people bring up Hubbard's background in the Satanic OTO before the founding of Scientology and some of the materials in Scientology that are anti-Christian, anti-religion, the secret materials Miscavige and his mouthpieces get up and say, "Scientology is a interdenominational religion. We have Christians, practicing Christians in Scientology."

J: Noooo.

L: "We are completely –"

J: No. You are looked down upon if you try to practice religion. You are sent to Qual. You are sent to ethics. You do not practice other religions in Scientology.

L: So if you were a practicing Jew, you'd be punished.

J: Yes. You could never go to a Bar Mitzvah. You could never participate in any -- No. You would definitely be punished. Absolutely.

L: And if you professed, went around the Org talking about God and how God had helped you?

J: You would be out of there.

L: They would move you out.

J: Oh yes, as a looney tune. As a crazy person.

L: They would think someone was crazy who believed in God?

J: Yeah, and went around talking about God and the church. Because a person used to do it, Amanda Ambrose. I don't know if you remember her.

L: I remember Amanda.

J: Oh yeah, she got put way on the back burner. She one time got on a God trip. Oh no, oh no. You're no longer a mouthpiece of Scientology. You're no longer a spokesman. You go over here and do this little project. We just don't even want to hear from you. You know, don't let her talk at events. None of this kind of stuff.

L: Because she talked about God.

J: Right. And then there was another Jewish woman in there that was a dancer and singer. What was her name? Started with a "t". She was a... What was her name?

L: Tina?

J: No, it was a...

L: Tshura... She was Jewish.

J: Right.

L: Tsura? I remember "t", a Jewish lady.

J: Yeah.

L: From Israel.

J: Right!

L: Tsura, something or other.

J: Same deal. Got rid of her. She was coming in with religion and God and all this kind of stuff, and she performed a couple of times and that's it.

L: Gone.

J: Gone.

L: So, then all this stuff about compatibility with world religions is just an out and out lie?

J: Out and out lie. Scientology is about domination, not about religion. It's about domination.

L: OK. Is there anything else relevant to this area of Scientology claiming to be a religion, or its religious practices, or this OTVIII level, or secret materials that deny God and basically religion an aberration that needs to be removed from people?

J: It starts at the beginning. It starts at the very beginning. I mean, think about those people that first got into Scientology. I mean, I think about this video where Hana Eltringham is doing secret rites in black robes with candles and stuff, that they had on the BBC, where it came from Aleister Crowley, I believe she even says it right there. And if you read the early paths, the way L. Ron Hubbard was going, he was so anti-religious. I read those early paths because I was doing some early Dianetics course and just researching. I started the briefing course, where you have read everything and it's a common thread throughout the Scientology literature to attack Judaism, to attack Christianity. Christianity the most because they're like, they consider them to be some of the most lost people, just in an implant, being controlled, out of their control.

L: The concept of being compassionate-- Many Christians try to be merciful and compassionate. Did you ever see anything in Scientology material that would mock or scorn Christians who were trying to be compassionate or merciful?

J: Yeah, there's something in the Philadelphia doctorate Course about how people are like sheep, and they try to help each other but that's kind of like crap because every person is responsible for what happens to them. They're creating their own universe so to have empathy or anything like that to go into agreement, you're actually pulling yourself down so you actually ostracize yourselves from people that are having problems and stuff because they're pulling it in or they're mocking it up kind of thing.

L: They're doing it to themselves.

J: They're doing it to themselves.

L: So if a person has a problem, you shouldn't be compassionate or merciful because they did it to themselves.

J: Right.

L: They deserve it

J: Right.

L: in a sense? Whatever happens to them.

J: A good line by Mr. Miscavige: "They're just stewing in their own juices."

L: OK. Let's change the whole subject. Let's talk a little bit about copyrights, OK? There's a case going on with-- Scientology-raided people all over the world that is claiming copyright fraud, and FACTNet is one of the organizations and people they raided. And they claim that FACTNet violated 1900 copyrights. Now, are you a legal expert on copyright law?

J: No.

L: OK. So you don't claim to be, you don't know all the innuendoes and subtleties and all the aspects of copyright law.

J: Correct.

L: Would it be safe to say that you understand Scientology materials?

J: Very much so.

L: Why would you be qualified to know Scientology materials? What experience in Scientology makes you very aware of what's in these materials?

J: Well, I will just tell you a horrible accolade that I got in the Church. In 1982, L. Ron Hubbard did a survey to find the person, the best cramming supervisor that they had in Scientology in or out of Sea Org who understood what they read the best and could try to do it the best.

L: You mean, what was in these materials.

J: What was in the materials. I was that person.

L: Out of all the people in Scientology, you were designated the top expert on what was actually in the materials.

J: Right. Correct.

L: OK.

J: Or teaching people to understand what was in them.

L: Or teaching people to understand.

J: Which would have had some meaning that I had an understanding.

L: So you've seen various materials, lots of Scientology materials. You've seen different versions of Scientology materials. You could generally tell a real one from a false one?

J: Right.

L: When you looked at the OTVIII document that is being circulated outside of Scientology as the original real OTVIII, the one people suspect they probably changed, did that look a real Scientology document?

J: No, because it had way too many typos in it and grammar problems and stuff like that. It looked like something that someone was saying from their memory.

L: OK. So it didn't have the same form and everything else as the original.

J: You know, it kinda did, but you could tell obviously it's not an original because they very seldom, I mean, they had proofreaders and correct and check all that stuff.

L: There were too many typos.

J: Way too many. There were about 56.

L: OK.

J: But the information contained therein, let us not invalidate that. I think it was probably more than one person that got together, unless somebody was sneaking away with notes, because I know the security of that ship and I know how difficult it is, or was, to get anything whatsoever out of there. They went through your briefcases, everything, so there was no way to take a camera in there to steal something. So I know that that information is just based on memory.

L: Memory.

J: Yeah. But that's not to be invalidated.

L: So in other words, that document could have been constructed by one or more people from notes and memory as best they could or what they read.

J: Exactly, right. Exactly. And that's exactly what it appears to be.

L: OK. You have looked at enough copyright documents in Scientology to know if it's a real Scientology piece or not, generally?

J: Generally, yes. I wouldn't say absolutely but generally, yes.

L: When you headed up the Issue Authority, tell us what you did in relationship to Scientology documents. What were your responsibilities heading up Issue Authority?

J: Um.

L: And you were the top guy in the world--

J: Right

L: --for the issuance of Scientology policies

J: As well as David Miscavige. Now, I was number 2.

L: Number 2. Right under him.

J: Right.

L: You were second guy, second last guy to sign off and say, "This is OK to issue."

J: Right. And a lot of times they would just go out anyway. But I do want to make one thing clear. There were certain issues that did not go through me like that.

L: What kind of issues did not go through you?

J: Technical ones. Technical bulletins, like stuff that would be compiled by RTRC.

L: So mostly policy letters went through your side of Issue Authority.

J: Yeah, policy letters, that's right.

L: No technical stuff.

J: Yeah, there was actually some technical stuff. I have to say there was, but the person who was really the issue authority on technical stuff was either Jeff Walker or Ray Mithoff.

L: OK.

J: I would occasionally look at these things.

L: OK. When Scientology created a new document to copyright, do you have knowledge? Just describe all your duties. As Issue Authority, what did you do? What did you have to do before David Miscavige signed off on this?

J: Just read it and sign it off myself. I had people under me that did all of the other stuff, make sure the tabs are right, and then actually would say-- And it would be routed to me. Sometimes, I didn't see everything that went through me because I had a person that was

under me that did that. And if he didn't do his job, then it became my job to do and that happened a time or two.

L: But you were the responsible person?

J: Exactly.

L: OK. When they would review these for Issue Authority, what would they look at?

J: Take the original. Well, there would either be multiple policy letters that had dis-related or somewhat related issues concerning the issue that was being created, and maybe some advice throughout the years. And they would make a compilation issue based on all these things, and they would put together something that had a specific theme and an idea, but it would come from many different sources.

L: OK, this compilation issue, whose name would they put on it?

J: L. Ron Hubbard's.

L: And this is when he was still alive.

J: Yes.

L: How much of a document that had his, did it say that certain parts weren't written by L. Ron Hubbard?

J: It didn't say anything. It just looked like any other issue.

L: So it would appear to a Scientologist that the whole document was written by L. Ron Hubbard.

J: Right.

L: When, in fact, L. Ron Hubbard could have written as little as a few lines of a several page document?

J: Or nothing at all.

L: You mean there could have been documents with L. Ron Hubbard's name on that he didn't write any part of?

J: Right. They were just a compilation of maybe different things that he had said, or some advices, or some other policy letter that had maybe a line or two that was significant to the issue, to the subject of the issue. So you'd get tabs, A, B, C and this advice. It was kind of like, make a coherent issue, a point out of all of these things that he

may have mentioned at several times but let's make an issue out of it, make it policy, or let's make it tech.

L: So, he may have written some of those other pieces that they were putting together, but the average Scientologist who would get one of these with L. Ron Hubbard's name on it, would it be reasonable to say that he would believe that way he saw it was the way L. Ron Hubbard wrote it?

J: Right.

L: Because they don't disclose that this is actually coming from places.

J: All over the place, yes.

L: Have you ever seen anything that no part of what L. Ron Hubbard wrote was in the document and yet they put his name on it? That somebody else wrote completely and that they added his name to?

J: That's like asking me a black and white question and it's just not a black and white issue. Some things would have some parts. I've never seen nothing that just had absolutely nothing that he had ever written, but I've definitely seen things that have come out that he had never seen. Never knew existed.

L: Created inside the organization and they put his name on it.

J: Yeah. And they spit it out. Right.

L: And they copyrighted it under his name when he didn't, in fact, create that.

J: Right.

L: OK. And let no one know that this was, in fact, a compilation. In some of these compilations, would two or three paragraphs possibly be written by L. Ron Hubbard and then several paragraphs written by someone else?

J: Correct.

L: Was that person's name disclosed, who was writing that?

J: The only way it's disclosed is, you will have "L. Ron Hubbard" then you'll have the initials of someone.

L: Was that the typist?

J: No. That was the person that actually compiled and wrote the damn issue.

L: Right.

J: And then behind that name is the typist.

L: OK. So these other people were actual authors.

J: Yeah.

L: When you were in Scientology, in one case you mention you had to examine David Mayo's stolen copy of the NOTs materials. And was that the Earle Cooley who was either a trustee or a member of the board of Boston University? He's a high member of Boston University?

J: Is that the attorney?

L: Earle Cooley out of Boston.

J: Yes.

L: OK. That, that's the same one.

J: Right.

L: OK. So when you looked at, they had you looking at David Mayo's copy of NOTs and Scientology's copy of the NOTs materials to examine them if to see if they were the same documents and they violated copyrights?

J: Right.

L: Why did they select you to look at, in this major copyright case or that had a copyright aspect, why did they trust you on this? Was this an important case, David Mayo's?

J: It was a RICO case.

L: Right. Was this important to Scientology?

J: Very much so.

L: So here's a major piece of litigation and Scientology selected you as the expert to examine the documents to see if they were violating copyrights, they were substantially the same documents?

J: Right, and I did that examination in front of a judge, Judge Marianna Fouser, made notes. She looked at it and agreed with it, that what I had done was correct.

L: So you had made a copyright determination for the Church of Scientology as their expert?

J: Right

L: In the RICO case

J: Right

L: They had made you an expert on copyrights.

J: It's because of me they even won that case.

L: And would you explain that?

J: Because my testimony was extremely compelling. I had one here, I had one here. I had made exact notes. And I pulled those out of my pocket and that's why we ended up having to go back to the judge's chambers, where they wanted to see. It never even came up as an issue where we got those materials from. As a matter of fact, they just willingly admitted, "Yes, this is that stuff," without questioning, "How did you get it?" or anything, you know?

L: When you were on the stand, did you ever say in your testimony, this would be part of a court record, that they have violated our copyright, these documents?

J: Yeah. There is this one, there is this one.

L: OK. Trade secrets? Trade secrets and copyrights.

J: It was a trademark copyright in our case.

L: And you said that this violates both our trade secrets and violates our copyrights?

J: Right. To the best of my knowledge, that's what I would call it.

L: So Scientology was using you as an expert.

J: Correct

L: To determine if the trademarks and copyrights were violated, and you testified?

J: As the senior tech expert person.

L: Right, because they've made great efforts to say that you don't have any expertise related to copyrights, related to Scientology materials, and yet they used you as an expert.

J: Sure, so we could just roll right back down to that RICO case.

L: And get the testimony

J: And get the testimony, and get the proceedings and get exactly what happened.

L: OK. When somebody issues a -- Have you ever seen Scientology take an old policy, or had knowledge of this, where they would take an old policy that went out of copyright and was in the public domain and add a few new things and re-issue that policy as a revised policy and then copyright the revised edition?

J: Sure. That's common practice.

L: That's common practice. Were you aware that if you re-issue an old policy, an old document and make changes to it, and then you copyright it, the only thing that's copyrighted on that document is the changes that you made? If you put revised by the Board of Directors for L. Ron Hubbard, that paragraph is copyrighted, but anything else that was previously in the public domain, is not copyrighted.

J: No, I did not know that.

L: You can only copyright those, if you changed one sentence and said, "See sentence two," and you put that in parentheses or "See the HCOB . . ." and you added that, that would be copyrighted. Nothing else on the page.

J: No, I had no idea. I am not a copyright expert or copyright law expert.

L: Did you, did anyone inside of Scientology ever discuss the documents, many of L. Ron Hubbard's, or some of L. Ron Hubbard's documents were probably copyrighted incorrectly or in the public domain?

J: Yes, and I've given testimony about that in the declaration affidavit that I gave and in this extensive deposition. Sure.

L: You were at a meeting.

J: With Dave Miscavige. I'll just go through it again. Where, prior to bringing up, bringing up this RICO lawsuit which we discussed, we were thinking of what type of action could we bring. And at that point, it was noted that the copyrights themselves (Yawns). Excuse me. As far as having a record of it and maintaining them and doing that, that was something that the old GO had the responsibility of doing and they never did do it, never did do it to Dave's knowledge or satisfaction to where it would be legal or valid. And then also, as a result of the 1977 raids, a lot of those per David Miscavige were just missing and didn't know where they were anyway. Then he kind of registered, you know early registration, and you know, in looking at this case, the specific one we're talking about here, the majority of the copyrights are copyrighted 1980 to 1983 through 1987.

However, these issues, we're talking about issues within '58, '67, 1970, so... What? What? What? How can that be? How could they, how could we be copyrighting something in 1983 that's been out 20 years, that had no previous copyright, notice of registration, or anything like that? And on a lot of them, it's like that. You can't file anything from the 1950s, the 1960s, the 1970s that says this work was ever copyrighted. Except in the compilation which happened in 1970, but what about '53, '50, that's a 20 year period.

L: Right. During those 20 years, how much of that was in public domain?

J: Every aspect of it. Every part of it was in public domain.

L: Did you ever hear them say that they feared that this was in public domain?

J: Oh, yeah. They said, "Please let's not do anything with the copyrights, and then Dave Miscavige and that's when this project got going with Pat Price, to actually collect. And in some instances they do have things that were copyrighted. They have 1955. But it's still, I don't know what the year periods is, but a lot of them are three or four years later. And some... I mean, you can just go through that evidence.

L: Was this a huge project in 1982 and 1983?

J: Yeah. Up through '87, yeah.

L: How many staff members do you think were involved full-time?

J: I know of one, but I know they probably engaged many others for several hours.

L: Do you have any estimate on how many documents, how many things they probably copyrighted in those years?

J: All 1900.

L: 1900.

J: Every one of those exhibits, you will see they have a current between those years.

L: Between '82 and '87.

J: '87.

L: Nothing is copyrighted earlier. It's all in the project that David Miscavige started.

J: Yes. Now, some things do have earlier registrations, which they did find. But you will find the vast majority of them do not.

L: So then, it's your understanding, or you believe that Miscavige knew that some of this stuff had fallen out of copyright?

J: He knew the great majority of it had, and argued with Pat Price incessantly about it because she came to him and said, "Look. There's nothing we can do about this." And he told her, "Do what you have to do to get it done. I don't care what you have to do." Don't bring me the problem. You know they replied to that.

L: So he told her do what she had to do, and she told him that these were out of copyright and nothing could be done.

J: Right.

L: You remember that conversation.

J: Yes.

L: You were there.

J: Yes. Indefensible, she says, "A lot of this stuff we can't do nothing with." " Maybe we shouldn't even bring it up" was her theory. "Just leave it alone, because if you bring it up then it's gonna be obvious that there's no copyright protection on this stuff."

L: So in that situation, they knew that most of the stuff or a large portion of the stuff was not copyrightable. David Miscavige told her, "Do what you have to do."

J: And screamed at her, put the fear of God in her, made her do it, called her CI [?], "What the hell you wanna do, see the church lose its stuff? What do you mean? There's a way, there's always a way to do something. Find it and do it."

L: Find and do it. So then she proceeded to file potentially thousands of false copyright applications?

J: Right. And then she was gone after that. Shortly thereafter she left the church.

L: She left the church.

J: Yeah.

L: Do you know where she might be located?

J: Somewhere on the West Coast. Portland/Seattle area, I'm thinking, San Francisco. The last I heard, she had gone and was irretrievable. She had gotten away. Because David Miscavige talked to me about this and she was, I think she was either paid money or something, but she was like, "Leave me the hell alone. I'm not coming back." But then they were still going to see her.

L: Who was going to see her?

J: Marty went to see her, maybe Terry Gamboa went to see her, you know, people from ASI trying to get her to come back. Now, that'd be good, if I could call Terri and ask her where I could find Pat Price. Break time.

[BREAK]

L: OK. We're talking about Pat Price, and would you said is that-- How important was Pat? Pat Price left Scientology.

J: She was L. Ron Hubbard's personal secretary in the Author Services.

L: And she was the one who personally filed all these copyrights that were in public domain and basically made it to appear that they were good copyrights, and refiled it, and followed David Miscavige's orders to do what she had to do?

J: Right.

L: To cover Scientology's copyrights.

J: Right.

L: Were there any attorneys assisting her with that at the time?

J: I believe Tom Small.

L: Tom Small was assisting her filing all these copyrights. Is there anything that would make you believe that Mr. Small knew that these were not valid copyrights that were being filed?

J: Yes.

L: What did he say or do?

J: I couldn't... That's something I believe. I didn't see or hear nothing.

L: Just your belief but you have no concrete evidence. He was involved in the filing of these, though?

J: He talked to her because we had a good trademark firm. And those things are kind of very much similar, if you do one, you do the other, trademark/copyright. And he seemed to be pretty knowledgeable about copyright law. And there was another attorney in his office that actually used to do all the work and was actually kind of gay and everyone

made fun of him, and I do believe he also may have worked with Pat. And he later dispected [?] and left Tom Small's office.

L: OK. When Pat Price left, was this a problem?

J: A major, major problem for Author Services.

L: You've seen a lot of problems as second in command at Scientology. On a scale of one to ten, how back a problem was this when Pat Price left?

J: It was a 12.

L: Why do you think it was a 12?

J: Simply because she was upset specifically with Norman and David Miscavige about their conduct, about their harshness, the screaming, the lewdness, the drunkenness that was going on every weekend at ASI. I mean, come Friday, everybody's drunk and--

[SIDE OF TAPE ENDS]

L: You were talking about?

J: She had been degraded so much herself, and screamed at and abused by David Miscavige, that I just think she had had enough. Her major complaint was the way Norman and David Miscavige ran that organization and how they treated the staff. Even though she was working at the best, most posh organization within the Scientology structure and getting paid more than anyone, she still could not tolerate the behavior.

L: OK. You said they were drinking on the weekends and getting drunk. Were they drinking inside the organization?

J: Yes, that's part of it.

L: You mean, at a bar or they'd bring in liquor?

J: Food, bunch of food, liquor. Whatever you want.

L: They would party inside the organizations and get drunk?

J: Yes.

L: How often did this occur?

J: I saw it happen week after week after week after week.

L: How many other Sea Org members on Friday have food and alcohol and get drunk and have a little party?

J: Well, Religious Technology Center started it, CSI started it. I know I definitely developed a drinking problem as senior executive within the Religious Technology Center.

L: Do you think these other Scientologists and the Sea Org members who were working 80, 90, a hundred hours a week and living in deprivation and making \$24 a week, are they aware of these weekend drunk parties at the headquarters of all of Scientology?

J: I don't think so.

L: And these were regular events.

J: But see, this is something you also have to take into consideration. That is the L. Ron Hubbard way. If you listen to Welcome to the Sea Org tapes, your introduction to the Sea Org. He himself talks about how much they drink, with the hot buttered rum and people getting drunk and having a good time. So that's what they do there.

L: Well how come all the staff members don't get to have a party on Friday and good food and alcohol, and get drunk? How come it's only these people at --

J: Lest I be the one to defend their practices.

L: That's just the way it is.

J: That's the way it is and there's no way that I can explain it. That's just the way it is.

L: When Pat Price left, you said it was 12 on a scale of 1 to 10. Were they worried about this?

J: Well, I'll tell you what happened and that'll answer that question. Ray Mithoff, the top senior technical person in the whole church flew out to see her. Marty Rathburn, the top legal person in the whole church, flew out to see her. I believe Terry Gamboa also flew off to see her and talk to her. I think very well Marion Linden [?] also may have flown off to see her.

L: All at the same time?

J: Oh no, different times. Heidi Stalli [?] probably went there and audited her. It's very possible that Mike Eldridge could have been one of the persons that went out there. He was like a senior Qual person inside ASI.

L: So there were six people over a period of how long?

J: Two months.

L: That flew out to wherever she was in an effort to get her back.

J: Right. Or to just like deal with her so that she was not a threat.

L: What do you mean by deal with her so she was not a threat?

J: So that she wouldn't go public or fall into enemy hands, enemy being critics of Scientology.

L: And they were worried that she might have information that would cause a problem for Scientology?

J: Yes.

L: Do you have or did you hear any information that somehow they silenced her in some way?

J: In some way, they reached an amicable agreement with her. It was beyond my information as to how it wrapped up.

L: But at some point, David Miscavige said, "We don't have to worry about her"?

J: We're not worried about her no more. Just check on her every now and again.

L: But she's gone.

J: Right.

L: Could that mean that they gave her a reasonable sum of money?

J: In my mind, that's what it means, that she was paid and signed a bunch of things and is deeply hidden.

L: OK. Would Sue Price, uh, Pat Price be the person who could testify as to whether or not Scientology falsely copyrighted materials that--

J: Between '80 and '88.

L: '87, that may be in fact the same materials that, would she be the best person to testify?

J: Yes.

L: That maybe the same materials that Scientology is claiming we infringed their copyrights on, in fact, OK. So she would be the person with the knowledge about what went on.

J: The specific detail and intimate knowledge of how the scam was done or how it was falsely represented to the copyright office, how these copyrights are still-- However she did it, I don't know. But I know, I've seen that woman come and say, "Look, we can't even do this, per the law we can't even do this."

L: She said you couldn't do it per the law.

J: And David Miscavige hit the roof. Yes. I was privy to that. She said, "We have no grounds, no basis of filing these things." She came in the -- Did I discuss this with you or was it part of my deposition where I said she came in? Yeah, it was part of my deposition. She came in with a handful of files, because there were several meetings in regards to this copyright issue. And after it was initiated I believe the second time -- and this was all part of that deposition that goes into great detail on this -- but she came in with many folders, that would be wider in your hand in this book, of copyright registrations. And she came in and said, "Well, there's a lot of this stuff we just can't do anything with because..." She just said it straight up like that to David Miscavige. He jumped up and hit the roof.

L: She said it went into the public domain.

J: Right.

L: She used those words.

J: Right. "We have no rights," she said. "We have no rights on these things." He hit the roof, quickly hustled her out of the room. He said, "She's off the, she's off the rails." And took her and screamed at her and said, "What the hell are you talking about?" And then he kind of calmed down and he said, "Look, we have to do this. Do you understand what this means? We have to make sure that we file these copyrights. I don't care what you have to do. Do it."

J: OK. Scientology went to a judge in many places around the country, particularly Denver, and said, "We own these copyrights. These are valid copyrights. We want a secret warrant to go into, to go through the doors with the marshals and search and seize the property of FACTNet and the directors, Lawrence Wollersheim and Bob Penny. And represented to the judge, through their attorneys, that these were valid copyrights to obtain a search warrant. To get a warrant to search and seize a person's house is one of the most serious and difficult things to do and it has to be accurate. You don't just break down people's doors in America based on rumors. It is a, probably a felony against the Federal court system, a felony against us in raiding our homes based on a false warrant which they obtained from the court under false pretenses. And what you're saying to me is that David Miscavige, the head of the Church of Scientology, who ordered the raid on

FACTNet, knew the copyrighted materials that Scientology filed were most probably false, that they were, many of these were in the public domain, and still knowing that they were committing a fraud, he ordered his attorneys in Scientology to submit this fraudulent information to the judge to search our places -- that he would have known that when he ordered the attorneys to go ahead and do this. He was well aware of it. Was Warren McShane ever privy to any of these conversations on the copyright issues? As the current head of RTC, would he have known?

J: Is he the current head of RTC?

L: I believe so.

J: Over David Miscavige? Not over David Miscavige.

L: Miscavige is off of RTC now.

J: Oh, what is he doing now?

L: I believe he's in some other corporate structure but I believe he's resigned from RTC.

J: And Warren McShane is in?

L: Yeah.

J: Oh, that's pitiful.

L: Do you recall Warren McShane ever being present when discussions about copyrights and things being in public domain and not being true?

J: I think Warren McShane would have intimate knowledge about that by way of the fact that he was one of the major persons within RTC as a person that was junior to me that would deal with trademark/copyright registrations and problems. He was also a person that was privy to come over to ASI and have some of these high clandestine-type meetings. And he would have also, if Pat Price would have spoken to anyone at RTC about it, it would have been Warren McShane.

L: He would be the person directly she was working with. He was around during the Pat Price times?

J: Yes.

L: So, you can't for sure but because of his position, it was probable that he was aware that these documents were fraudulently filed?

J: Very much so.

L: And he participated in the fraud on the federal judge, causing federal marshals to come out and raid out our places?

J: I guess you can make that assumption but there is one thing that I want to say about Warren McShane while it's on my mind. It's just incredulous to me that he is the person that is head of RTC right now, because he had at least two near psychotic breaks during the time period that I was there simply because of the stress that he was under. He was not a real conditioned, hard conditioned Sea Org member. He had been in public for quite awhile and then he came into the Sea Org and got this, all these crush, heavy stress kind of treatment simply because he had, he looked good on paper. But he was certainly one of the most weakest persons in the organization so I can only even imagine that he must have had the Mary test of fire, something horrible has happened and now he's really gone, because he was always one that had doubts and didn't know whether or not he was doing the right thing, or whether or not he could do what he was being asked to do, this kind of thing.

L: When you say he had two psychotic breaks --

J: Near psychotic breaks.

L: Near psychotic breaks, do you remember any more detail about that?

J: Yes, once we were in DC. This was shortly after Reagan got shot in DC. We were in DC. We meaning David Miscavige, Norman, Vicky Aznaran, Rick Aznaran, Warren McShane, Alan Cartwright. And Joe Yanny too. And Warren had been doing some work. I don't remember specifically what it is but I know I ended up having to sit with him while everyone went out and partied and got drunk because he was my junior, because he was incapable of functioning at all. I mean, he was just like staring around, just a bumbling idiot, talking to himself. He was a mess.

L: You'd say a near psychotic state?

J: Yeah, that's what I said exactly.

L: Why were you all in Washington, DC?

J: I'm trying to recall the event.

L: Was it the Org or something like that?

J: No. We were up there on business. Oh! They had opened up a PR office in DC. Oh, now you got me remembering about politicians and stuff. Yes, yes, yes. They opened up a PR office in DC to affect, to start rubbing elbows with politicians, to become involved with the political process, to get allies. This was some bright idea to have some big PR office. I think, who was it? Cathy somebody, somebody was over it, and we were there,

spared no expense with the cost, with the idea of getting senators and lawmakers and lawyers and judges all cozy, cozy, cozy with Scientology.

L: Do you have any idea how much they spent, you know, to create this office? Any estimates?

J: About a half a million dollars.

L: Half a million dollars to set up a public relations office to influence politicians in Washington.

J: Correct.

L: Do you know what --

J: It was prior to, yeah, this was prior to the IRS agreement because that was part of the strategy with trying to get tax exempt status, is to get Scientology into the main legal minds of the people on Capital Hill making those decisions.

L: Did they ever discuss setting up this office to influence politicians?

J: That's the exact reason why it was there, to influence people, to win friends and gain influence.

L: To influence legislation?

J: Particularly concerning Scientology, yes.

L: The Church of Scientology. So they were there setting this up to influence legislation for the Church of Scientology.

J: Right.

L: A church is not allowed to engage in political lobbying or try to influence legislation. Their tax-exempt status would be pulled away immediately if it's found out that a church is using the power of religion and the pulpit. There is separation of Church and State in this country for very good reasons, and if a church is influencing elections, politicians, or legislation, that's grounds to remove a 501(c)(3).

J: OK. You know that and maybe people you're talking to, but let me just say some more about this. I remember having meetings at Author Services in that boardroom, same boardroom where we with copyrights and all of that, another clandestine meeting, where it was researched the exact location. It was even figured out, OK, which legislator goes here, where the judge hangs out, where these people go, is where we're gonna put this PR church. And it ended up being in a ritzy area. And it was made to look ritzy, just like everything else. This was planned and executed for months. The research, the concept

being to influence these lawmakers, to get in and start rubbing elbows, specifically for the tax-exempt status, and different legal cases that were going on with the church at the time.

L: To try to influence the legislator, the judicial department on legislation that was ongoing against the church.

J: Correct. I don't know how successful it was.

L: You were in the ASI building. Were they doing this for ASI or were they doing this for the Church of Scientology.

J: For the Church of Scientology.

L: Why do you say that and not, because you were in the ASI building?

J: Because, that's -- ASI is like the corporation that at that time period ran the entirety of Scientology and the person who was doing that was David Miscavige.

L: So ASI, in effect, ran Scientology.

J: Yeah, and we've said that a hundred times.

L: OK. It's important for legal reasons. It relates to this particular thing that you're talking about. Going back to your experience and expertise in Scientology, when they would issue-- You said before that you're not an expert on publication and issuing, and the legal definitions for copyrights, but you know when something's issued in Scientology by Scientology's definition of what it means when it's issued.

J: Right.

L: And you know when they've published, when they issue something, that's publication in Scientology.

J: That's the same.

L: Even though, out in the law of the world, when you issue it and when you publish it might have a legal difference definition, in Scientology, everybody knows when you issue something, that means it's published, and it can either have a big list of who it's issued to or a small list--.

J: Correct.

L: But you are publishing that to selective public groupings.

J: Put it this way. It is published and issued, my understanding of it. OK, so like this is, so this is a new edition that we gonna put out by L. Ron Hubbard even though he may have never seen it or whatever. It goes through Issue Authority and the moment it's approved, it is then published as a document, many, many copies made and then it's issued to whoever it goes to.

L: So you know Scientology's definition?

J: Right, and that's what I've just explained.

L: Issued and published, it might not be the same as what the legal definition of issued and published. Like, for example, a person can write something, you know, and have it being typed, and have it being proofread. Somebody might consider that issued but not until the book publisher put it into a bookstore would it be considered published.

J: Right.

L: That might be another definition used in law or some other corporation. But in the corporation of Scientology, when it was issued, it was published.

J: When it was approved, it was published, then issued.

L: Right. Approved, published, and issued.

J: So, massive copies of it, and then issued. Boom.

L: OK. Do you know of anyplace that Scientology keeps archives of original policy letters written by L. Ron Hubbard?

J: That I know of is CSC and RTRC.

L: They actually have the originals, handwritten, stored somewhere.

J: Right.

L: Do you think they have the original long form mimeos, like they were sent out to the Orgs and missions, like some historic copy?

J: Right.

L: Have you ever seen or heard about historic copies?

J: I've seen those things. I've seen old mimeograph things like that. What happened to them after computerization I do not know.

L: Well--

J: Let me speak. There's maybe another way to look at this, because I know that during my tenure of computerization at Scientology, another thing that they would do in order to store information is microfiche, when microfiche first came out. So a lot of things, the storage was – and I don't remember because I was doing a project. Microfiche everything. And that was kept in several secret locations, information with Incomm. Like they had certain places where there's just massive amounts of microfiche information. A lot of it concerns knowledge reports, this, that, and the other thing. But also as part of preservation, microfiche was kept on certain projects, so that may be --

L: Do you where those microfiche centers are?

J: They were kept near the major A-frame within Scientology and Incomm on the [?] Street. Some of them. And other ones were taken to secret locations of which I did not know.

L: OK. Did you hear about the gold CD's that they made and put into storage?

J: Yes.

L: What's on those gold CD's that you know of?

J: I have no idea.

L: OK. Your experience in Scientology, did they preserve L. Ron Hubbard's stuff, materials?

J: Yes they did.

L: Is it likely -- you might not be able to answer yes or no -- but is it likely that original copies of these policies and original L. Ron Hubbard notes and original mimeos may be preserved on microfiche, on gold CD's, or somewhere?

J: Yeah, and in their own original form.

L: The actual paper.

J: The paper itself, because what they got into doing is putting, doing some process on the paper, the really old ones, to stop the acids and paper from-- Let me back up. Normal paper has acid in it and it deteriorates over time. They were working on a project to not only preserve them by taking pictures, microfiche or whatever, but also to stop the deterioration of the original document and then place it in sealed plastic. So, they very well could have copies of all these original things in sealed form.

L: So they went to great deal of effort to preserve documents of L. Ron Hubbard.

J: Right.

L: To start chemically treating them and sticking them in plastic, that's pretty significant, along with microfiching.

J: Yeah.

L: So, the court could ask Scientology to produce the original microfiches and the original documents, if those showed that they were false, they would be destroyed before they ever got to the court?

J: No, here we go with the corporate veil. Here we go with entities that I've been privy to, the Earle Cooley, the Lenske. If ever the court demanded it from one corporation, it would be found in reality in another, separate corporation not part of the litigation, so in other words you could chase that crap around until time immemorial and you would never find it.

L: So if Judge Kane in Denver ordered the Church of Scientology, RTC, to produce these original L. Ron Hubbard documents...

J: It would never happen.

L: ...they would say they do not have them and they do not exist?

J: Right, and they would say they don't even know where the hell they are.

L: And they don't know where they are, and they would have been instructed – this is a policy in Scientology – to move any documents that are requested by the court, if they are not destroyed because you told me they destroy some of them.

J: Oh, yeah. They never destroy the original, but things that have been published.

L: Right. So they'll keep the original, move it to another corporation, and what they'll be doing is telling the truth to the judge that they don't have it, but lying about they don't know where it is.

J: Right.

L: And what they do is move it to another corporation so they don't have to produce it, and basically lie to the court.

J: Right. So you spend this time running around trying to get the original. "Oh well, RTC, well CSI has it, well maybe it's part, well it was part of old CSC documents, that's what we know, used to be, OK well, let's get a motion." And years later...

L: So bottom line is if these documents show they had done false copyright filings even though they possess the originals that would clearly show the fraud...

J: Right.

L: They would not produce them?

J: Never see them.

L: But they wouldn't destroy them?

J: No, they would have them.

L: They would have them, they would just deny by moving it to a different corporation.

J: Now, let's take a break.

[BREAK]

L: OK, when we left we were talking about attorneys.

J: Piercing the corporate veil.

L: How they avoid producing documents and how they use the corporate shell to perpetrate a fraud on the court. Can you talk a little bit about that?

J: I've been privy to several meetings beyond MCCA where after the formal relationship with MCCA and different critics came up against Scientology and showed weaknesses in the corporate structure, so many more corporations were set up. You know there's even a more secret corporation now that I'm talking about it than CST. I only heard the name of a couple times, so in case something happens to CST, materials will fall there.

L: Will go to that location?

J: Yeah. And that was so secret I only heard it mentioned two times.

L: So there's some corporation that you've never even heard of, that if something happens to CST...

J: Right. But what I was saying is after the MCCA and different things occurred, new corporations, new restructuring, and it was all done from the premise of, what if they came after certain things, like what if the IRS comes? They're only going to get a certain bite. Because we've moved corporations, we've moved bank accounts, we've moved everything. If they come after documents, if they come after upper level materials, well we have these corporations set up that will run them around, they'll never get it, we'll never have to produce them, they just won't find them. And the whole premise of those

corporations was not to be independent operating corporations, but to be a shell and a buffer against imagined or real threats.

L: So, for example if a judge ordered documents to be produced by RTC, the practice would be that either RTC would have anticipated they were going to have to produce these documents and would have transferred them to another corporation, or they would transfer them at the time of the judge's order to produce documents to one of the other corporate shells, and then tell the judge that they don't possess those documents or know where they are?

J: Right, and in the example you just gave, well RTC doesn't have it, then they say CSI has it. Now look at what physically happens. CSI has to be physically brought into the thing, motions, this, that. In the meantime, the clock ticks. Now we get up to the point that, CSI you have to produce this. Well, we don't have them and never said we did. They're someplace else.

L: And move them again to another corporation.

J: Or they may never have had them in the first place, and knew where they were all along, but instead of doing that, it's like let's buy the clock.

L: Do you know of any specific time that the court ordered documents where the corporation moved the documents either in anticipation of the court order or at the court order to another location, and then denied they had the documents. Do you recall any situation when somebody asked for something?

J: I don't have a real concrete specific about that, but the thing that comes to mind is that probate case, when it had something to do with L. Ron Hubbard and producing certain records and things to do with L. Ron Hubbard. There were definitely some shenanigans going on there.

L: Moving them to another corporation so they didn't have to produce them for the court?

J: Right. Or setting up a new corporation to take the burden off this one, so that if anything happens here, well it's not there, it's here.

L: Gotcha, it's a shell game. So you never know where the assets are, and they're denying that they're in the corporation that the court or whoever is asking for?

J: Right, and they're doing it in a very intelligent way. They have the best lawyers that have taught them how to do it the most slickest way they possibly can.

L: You mentioned while we were walking something about the IRS case.

J: This IRS case, now there was a point in time when the IRS was auditing one of the corporations. The church was providing information, this, that, and the other thing. And the idea that blew the IRS off which made them laugh real hard, is when someone goes to a mission, receipts. They pulled out receipts and just gave them to him, that was just overwhelming. I mean after going through, I don't know, 70,000 receipts – you know meticulously -- they laughed because they stopped looking at a certain point. But getting to the point...

L: So they overwhelmed the IRS people, the inspectors, by giving them so many receipts that they became befuddled?

J: Right.

L: And that was done intentionally to just overwhelm them.

J: Yeah. It was like a bear trap. It was like, just let them ask us this one thing, and we're going to open this door, and we're going to give them so much shit that they're going to run away. Yeah, they were bear-trapped into that.

L: And they laughed about...

J: Laughed and laughed and laughed.

L: Who was it that laughed?

J: David Miscavige, Lyman Spurlock, Norman Starkey, Marty, Vicky Aznaran. We were just there, you know. But they had a person inside, they had an inside connection in the IRS. They had an inside connection. They had some attorney or someone, initials all secret, and they intentionally never said names. Some attorney hooked them up to someone he knew, a retired IRS person, who then put them in contact with someone right in the office in Washington IRS, giving them information on what to do.

L: To get their status.

J: To get their 501(c)(3).

L: And would this have been secret if this was a normal legal relationship, would they have kept it secret? Would they have kept this secret if this was appropriate behavior by the IRS agent.

J: No. Lawrence, I don't mean to be short but God knows that's a rhetorical question. You know exactly why they did it. They did it because they were running an op. They were under orders to get this done. And I'm sure that a lot of palms got greased to get this done. And it would have been done through the attorneys.

L: The attorneys would have been passing the money to the IRS agent?

J: Right.

L: OK. You mentioned MCCA. MCCA was originally a corporate sort-out, reorganization to hide L. Ron Hubbard's control.

J: Right.

L: Were there any other projects that were given new names after that, that essentially did the same thing or were similar to that that you knew of?

J: Nothing with any formal name, but definitely similar itinerants. Specifically with their upper level materials shifting all around – their confidential materials – and then financially things were set up so that, you know it wouldn't even be shocking to me if you found some European corporation actually running the US corporation. It wouldn't be a shock to me. Because the major concern was, it's too hot in the United States. Let's get this in a country where the United States does not have undue influence. And that's a political thing, that changes all the time. I'm not saying what it is today. But I know the whole basis and the reason why that was even gone that way was that so the United States would not have jurisdiction over the majority of Scientology assets.

L: So you believe there's some shadow corporation in some foreign country that really runs all of...

J: And I think that Marina Bergotti was one of the persons that was on it.

L: So if something happened in the US, the foreign corporation would take over the assets and say they really owned them.

J: Right. See, Marina Bergotti was in the UK, in England, and she would come over like twice a month, fly over with financial statements about foreign interests.

L: Let me see here. I have this section that you can...

J: Take home?

L: Yeah, take home.

[END OF TAPE]

Tape 7, August 30, 1998

Lawrence Wollersheim and Jesse Prince

L: Tonight is Sunday the 29th of August. This is Lawrence Wollersheim, I'm with Jesse, this will be the last tape that probably is going to be made for a reasonable length of time, and I want to remind you that just what you know, I do this regularly, it's important.

J: Today's the 30th.

L: The 30th, I'm sorry. Just exactly what you know, if you don't know it, names, dates, events, people involved with anything. Particularly since this is the last time we're going to talk, and I've told you that these tapes are going in to the FBI, don't hold anything back tonight. In this next 2 hours, or whatever it is, anything that you've thought of over the last couple of days, anything that you've been reminded of, be sure to get it in the record tonight. As they will take what's come so far, they will gather this together, and this will be the format for their meeting with you.

J: OK.

L: OK. So, #1, my first question is, did Scientology ever offer you money since you left Scientology for your silence?

J: No.

L: They never did?

J: They never did.

L: Stacy mentioned something about a \$3 million offer.

J: That was that in '87.

L: When you were in Scientology. Explain the circumstances of this \$3 million offer.

J: I had left Scientology in '87, contacted the LA Times and was going to go public at that time. I told them I wanted nothing else to do with the church, and I believe my original figure I asked them for was \$10 million. We talked, none of these talks in and of themselves I considered to be serious because they were working on other things which worked for them, which was my ex-wife. And that was that.

L: So you went to the LA Times?

J: I called them on the phone.

L: You called the LA Times, and then Scientology contacted you, and did you initiate to them you were going to go public unless they paid you \$10 million or did they say, "Jesse, we can work this out"?

J: Pretty much that.

L: No, I need to know clearly, did you initiate the asking for the money or did they?

J: They.

L: So they said to you... tell me what was said and who said it.

J: This was at the very beginning, I'm trying to think of who it was, who was my handler. My handler was Ray Mithoff, and there was another person, somebody from Gold, maybe Ron Norton, maybe Wendell Reynolds.

L: How did it come up? They said...

J: Well, I'll tell you specifically. It was like, I'm leaving here, "What are you going to do? What are you going to do?" I said, well, besides expose you [Scientology] and stuff, I had also capital myself at the time. I was, I'm not concerned with what I'm going to do. It was related, "If you're gonna, if you do take this choice, you're going to need some help, you're going to need something. You're going to need some money to get started." I was like, "Oh you want me just to go away. It'll be about \$10 million."

L: That's what you said, what did they say then?

J: They laughed. I can't say that I was serious about it either, because I was very emotional at the time. It was a very emotional situation. We didn't discuss it very much further than that, because of the high emotion. You know, people say things...

L: How did this \$3 million amount come up?

J: I'm trying to think if it was Marty that said, "Oh, but you'll take 3"? I said, "Probably." I want to make a point so that there's no confusion about this. These talks were not serious. These talks were done in the heat of the moment, because I had left and I was completely out of their control. Now I'm in the city, where if somebody tries to grab me and hold me I can scream and someone will call the police. Now, I'm not on their turf. I'm somewhere else where I have civil rights and they know that. That's pretty much what that was about.

L: So, after these discussions then you went back into Scientology then?

J: Yeah.

L: Why?

J: Because my ex-wife who was still there couldn't see that we shouldn't be there, and I had compassion for her, and I stayed for her until she saw that this wasn't where we needed to be.

L: Did she come out and ask you to stay?

J: Yes.

L: So she was part of the handling?

J: Right.

L: To have her come out there and basically ask, beg, cajole, what word would best describe it?

J: The way that it's best described is pretty much how I said it. Her and I loved each other very much, and this was something that was extremely upsetting to her. She was crying.

L: The fact that you were leaving and she couldn't see you anymore?

J: Right.

L: So you decided to come back in?

J: Right. Specifically because I started waking up to what was going on and she didn't.

L: After 1987, did you rise in the organization, or what was the end?

J: I didn't try, I wouldn't do anything.

L: From that point on you were at lower level positions?

J: I was in the lower state of mind. It's kind of like I had no real will to live.

L: Do you think they trusted you after that point?

J: I don't know what they did, I'm just trying to indicate to you where I was at. I had no will to live. I was just existing.

L: OK. When you finally left Scientology, were you ever taken into a room with lawyers and a videotape camera to get you to sign documents stating you'd never talk about what happened with you and Scientology?

J: Yeah.

L: Did you feel, did they videotape you at the time?

J: I think they did a tape recorder, yeah, they probably videotaped it too.

L: And did they ever say anything like, "you are doing this on your own free will"?

J: Let me just communicate to you a concept so that you get the idea about this. I'm in a situation where my wife finally sees the light. They've done everything to us, they've sec checked us, they've degraded us in every way that they possibly can, simply because we want to leave. Now the thing that they had on us was the fact that she still has family in Scientology. Her father, who is the person that she looks up to more than anybody in her life, and her sister. Then they looked like twins. They told her and me that she would never see them again unless we did what they wanted us to do.

L: They told you you'd never see her parents again?

J: Right, never talk to them.

L: Unless you did exactly what they told you. What did they tell you to do?

J: Sign what they told us to sign. When it came to videotaping and recording and doing all of that stuff, it's like this, and I want you to really get this idea. "Here's jail, here's freedom. If you do A,B, and C you can leave jail and do freedom." That was my state of mind at that time. You've got to know that. You've got to know that I did whatever I did what I had to do to leave that place so that my wife could still be in contact with her family and we could physically leave.

L: I understand that completely.

J: I did not read the papers.

L: I am not asking as an adversary, I'm asking for the record, don't see me as an adversary.

J: No I don't, I'm making a record with these questions, because there's a bit of human compassion involved in this, there's a bit of human emotion involved in this. Like I said, I didn't even read the papers. If there is video, and they have that video, and you will see when they handed me the papers to read, I just signed.

L: You never read the papers, did they explain them to you verbally?

J: Oh, they went all over it, and asked me if I had any questions. No.

L: So you didn't read it, they explained it to you.

J: If you look at the very beginning of the tape, we drew a line in the sand, and that line of sand was this. "If I do this last thing you tell me, can we go?" And they said, "yes." You've got to understand, there was a line drawn in the sand. I don't care what video they've got, I don't care what tape machine they had, the agreement was if I do this last

thing, her and I could walk out. If that meant taking a handful of shit, and throwing it across the room I would have done it.

L: Your understanding was that you would not be free from their restraint and their control unless you signed a document?

J: Or whatever they asked me to do this one time.

L: Did you have a lawyer representing you in the room?

J: You know better. No.

L: Did they give you a copy of each document when you left, so they kept all the copies.

J: Everything.

L: You never read the document.

J: They took all my wedding photos, they took the majority of my possessions from me. I left there with one trunk, no, two trunks of things from 16 years of living a bad life, leaving a good life, I left there with two trunks. They took everything I had.

L: Did they pay you for the stuff they took?

J: No.

L: What right did they have to take it?

J: That's a question you can ask them. That's a rhetorical question. Obviously they had no right.

L: At the point that you decided to let them have it, it was freedom vs. letting them take these things?

J: Right.

L: You wanted to get out of there.

J: That's right. You're behind bars and a person says, if you do 1, 2, and 3, you can walk, I guarantee you're going to 1, 2, and 3.

L: Was there a lawyer for Scientology in the room?

J: Yes.

L: Do you remember what his name was?

J: No.

L: Could you describe him, or if you heard his name would you remember it.

J: If I heard his name I would remember it. I just want to make one thing clear about this. These were some of the blackest moments of my life. It wasn't a whole lot of consciousness there.

L: I do understand. So you didn't read it, you signed it...

J: And ran out the door.

L: You ran out the door because it was the only way to get away from the people.

J: They changed the document, let me speak for a second. It happened on the 31st of October, not the 1st of November. They wrote 1st of November. It happened on the night of the 31st of October. The night that I signed it, they said, "Don't you just want to stay, you can leave in the morning?" I said, "Hell no, I want to leave when this pen goes to paper and I sign this, I want to leave in that instant." That's how it happened.

L: They altered the date of the actual document as well?

J: Right.

L: Did they tell you that you had to be silent about your experiences, everything that ever happened to you in Scientology that they told you?

J: Well, the document that I signed kind of speaks for itself. You read that, it's pretty much what it says.

L: You've seen it now, and actually read it. They presented...

J: No, I still haven't read it.

L: You have never actually read it. These are specific questions that have bearings in law, that's why I'm asking them. I'm not testing you, challenging you or doubting what you're saying. I'm asking questions that help me to understand the legal premise that was going on. Did they tell you or inform you that a confidentiality agreement has no bearing if it's designed to cover up acts of fraud or criminality?

J: No.

L: At a certain point you met with Earl Cooley.

J: 1995.

L: An attorney for Scientology. Why did you go out there, what was the reason you went out there?

J: I went out there because they said they wanted to talk to me to see how things were going with me personally, and to talk me to about the Aznarans' case. You have to understand something about me. When you ask another question, please let me talk. I am still a Scientologist in my mind. Not a Sea Org member, but I'm working at a Scientology corporation that they arranged, subsequent to that meeting as a matter of fact, I was a booking agent. My wife is still very much into wanting to have a family, wanting to be able to talk to her father, wanting to be able to talk to her sister. My wife, my ex-wife, was off on a program trying to get her whole family together from this Scientology experience. It was very important to her at that time, that we maintain good relationships with Scientology. Her and I had talked, and as we unraveled over a 2 ½ period of years from Scientology, we had pretty much decided that anything to do with Scientology, technological-wise, ethics-wise, and administrative-wise was just complete much bullshit. We came to an understanding that her and I were two very confused people and were having a very difficult time in the world together. It was still paramount to her to have her family. So during this time period, we're still very much under their control. They would call, like once a month, twice a month, Mike Sutter would call, "What you doing," this and that. Also people watched us, similar to what's going on now.

L: PIs would occasionally follow you in Minneapolis?

J: Yes.

L: This occurred over what length of time?

J: 2 ½ year period. I'm still pretty much under this blanket of fear of Scientology for my wife's sake and also for job's sake, because Mike Sutter made an innuendo that "If you're not doing what we say, we can make it very difficult for you in the world, because we have major connections in all kinds of business. And if you start doing something that we don't like, life will be difficult for you."

L: He said that to you, Mike Sutter?

J: Mike Sutter.

L: Mike Sutter made a threat that your economic life would be affected if you give us any trouble. Were you working in a Scientology company?

J: At that time when he made that threat, no.

L: How long after you left Scientology did you work for a Scientology company?

J: When I first got out, I took a bunch of odd jobs, this that and the other. I think after a year and a half, then I started working for this Scientology company, at which the whole Scientology machine just went back in together. They would call the job where I worked. Mike Sutter, "Hey what's happening, what you doing, you working for this Scientologist. You've got to keep your nose clean. You need to do an OW write-up." All this shit, so I'm fighting after I had some little bit of relief from Scientology, now I'm right back into it. Now this person that I work for is just driving me tremendously with this Scientology stuff. She's trying to get me to be a qualifications officer, and recruit other people into Scientology, do weekly OW, just like they do in the Sea Org, and then I started resisting it.

L: Let me ask you a question. Is it reasonable that she was brought in by the GO to keep an eye on you and they were pumping reports through her as the employer?

J: I would say this she was an instrument and an arm of Mike Sutter, who reported directly to David Miscavige.

L: So they're very much worried about you?

J: No. They very much still have me under control.

L: You mentioned the Aznarans, as the reason why you were going to see Earl Cooley, can you elaborate on that?

J: Well, not really, because when I got up there, that was not what they wanted to talk about.

L: Why did you think you were going to see Earl Cooley?

J: I thought I was going to see Earl Cooley for a reason that I didn't know, which was "We want to see how you're doing, who you've been talking to," which makes no damn sense. The primary reason I went out there I didn't understand; the secondary they wanted to talk to me about the Aznaran thing, which they did very little of.

L: They were worried about Rick and Vicky Aznaran?

J: You've got to listen to me, this is what they were worried about. Because I found this out later. They figured my statute of limitations had run up, and my ability to sue them. In other words, I guess three years had passed, or whatever, and now I can no longer sue them. This is what we talked about when I went there. The Aznaran case, none of that. Listen to me. They talked to me about my ability to sue them, Monica's [Jesse's ex-wife's] ability to sue them, who any disaffected person's been calling us this. I met with them and spoke to them, I was just there for a couple days. The first day was consumed with what I've been doing in detail. The second day, which we only met for an hour and a half, to the best of my knowledge, they started talking to me about other cases that I had been involved in and did not need anything from me whatsoever. I left.

L: Did they give you any walking around money?

J: \$3,000.

L: They gave you \$3,000 cash.

J: And paid all my expenses.

L: \$3,000 cash and paid for your hotel and your airline?

J: And my rental car and everything. And to go up, fly to New York. I didn't go back home, I want to New York when I left there.

L: They even paid for an extra flight that had nothing to do with it?

J: Right.

L: How much to you think all that other cost was for those other 2 days you were there?

J: About \$4,500 because I stayed at the Boston Harbor Hotel, which is the top hotel. I had a suite to myself, a beautiful bedroom, a living room, food delivered and all of this and everything.

L: Your expenses were about \$1,500 for two days and they gave you \$3,000 cash, which is \$4,500?

J: I'd say approximately that amount.

L: They gave you \$3,000 walking around money?

J: For 2 ½ days.

L: For 2 ½ days. Very interesting. When you were at Earl Cooley's office, just as a note, your statute of limitation runs from the point you discover fraud or deception, truly understand and discover fraud and deception, five years. If you didn't know you had been deceived or defrauded, it's from the point you finally understand. So you may still have a lawsuit against them.

J: Well...

L: If you were under their control and under their influence and they were lying to you about the law, you very well may have a lawsuit, but that's neither here nor there. When you were at Earl Cooley's office, did they videotape you in any way?

J: I know we recorded it, I'm not certain about videotaping.

L: So they had a voice recorder on and they were asking you questions. Did they ask you to sign any more documents?

J: Not that I know of.

L: But they were asking who you had talked with and who you were involved with?

J: How much money do I make, how is it where I live. Just a zillion questions.

L: What do you think they were looking for?

J: Exactly what I said, I think they were looking to see whether or not I had come to myself enough, or if someone had talked to me to where I had my strength back and my mind back to fight them.

L: Did Early Cooley make any threats to you, or did anyone there make any threats if you would speak about things in your confidentiality agreement that your life would be very difficult?

J: Not at that time, but they just told me -- because in fact there had been no instances because I was literally in hiding. No one knew where I was. They told me to make sure that if anyone ever called me or said anything to me, for me to call them immediately and gave me several numbers to reach them at.

L: OK. Has there been any other attempted coups in Scientology, other than when Miscavige took Mary Sue Hubbard and the old GO out and the guardian's office out and took out all those people and replaced them with himself and a new power structure? Did you ever hear of an attempted coup of other executives rebelling against Miscavige and saying that he needs to be removed from post, he should be Comm Ev'ed, or he's insane?

J: Beyond what I've spoken about, nothing else.

L: You were in Scientology for 16 years, you've disclosed a lot of information that some day will pieces will be out in the public, if not all of it. Scientologists are also mid-level executives are going to read this and they're going to say either, "Jesse's the biggest liar in shoe leather, or these things really happened, and I've got to start to think about it." What do you think will have to happen inside of Scientology for people to understand what you know about the organization, and to do something inside? In other words, for other members to go "Oh my God, there's these unknown corporations and bank accounts that nobody knows about." I mean...

J: I just don't think it's as simple as that, Lawrence, that problem goes beyond that. The normal person, who you and I said, as incredulous as it is, who makes \$24, \$32 a week, they've been in the Sea Org any length of time, they're already completely disassociated from their family. They have no place to go, they have no other options. In their minds,

they are exercising the best option that they have because everyone hates them, and they have no place to go.

L: You believe that nothing would shake their minds enough to challenge?

J: Oh yeah, I do.

L: What would shake their minds enough to challenge the top?

J: If the threat were removed, David Miscavige, Norman Starkey, Marty Rathburn, these people that are perpetuating these criminal activities, that makes them increasingly more frantic to make increasingly more money to cover the increasing cost of expense of these criminal activities. It's just a circle jerk. You start it, and it's just unending, a frantic circle.

L: So they have to be either removed by the government, or they have to have flown, or...

J: Be gone.

L: Do you ever see, like the next tier of OSA people, who aren't at Rathburn's level, who aren't Miscavige, Rathburn, Spurlock and Starkey. Do you ever see the people just underneath that, or just underneath the next level saying, "We've seen enough to know that for the good of Scientology we now need to put you guys under arrest. You've embezzled millions of dollars out of the organization, you are harming us, you are harming everything we thought we were doing"? You don't see that as ever happening?

J: No, because the people that are right underneath those people are being influenced and demanded to do enough criminal activities themselves so that...

L: So the Mike Rinder level?

J: Right. No, forget it.

L: They're involved in the criminal activities as well.

J: And the lying, and the perpetrating of lies. They know about it, they're not the ones that are making the decisions of what to do, but they certainly are actively involved.

L: So he's tracked them in the criminal cycle, so that if he goes down the go down as well, and the people so far down the organization don't have enough power?

J: They don't have a clue of what's going on.

L: And they don't have the power to do a coup anyways, that would be credible.

J: Right. Because David Miscavige, as we've gone over earlier, has his people, has all the trustees, there's a zillion, every one who's on the board of directors, has an undated resignation, whereas if they do one thing out of line, they're gone.

L: They're gone, they're just removed.

J: Removed. And the net one comes up.

L: And the lawyers are all in on this as well, they're getting big money. So that what you're saying is that the only way Scientology is going to be fixed is if...

J: From the outside.

L: Federal government and countries all over the world arresting these people, trying them on criminal charger, and where proven, putting them in jail.

J: Outside intervention based on the facts. That's what's going to change it. Because, inherently, the organization is bent. Inherently the organization is bent because L. Ron Hubbard was bent. Irrespective of who was on the top, if you read L. Ron Hubbard's policies and if you follow them, just like that old GO had, and the lying, TRs and all that kind of stuff, he is bent. Everyone that's going along that path is going to be bent to a greater or lesser degree, or be susceptible to it.

L: He's created a machine that reproduces himself?

J: Right.

L: OK. What other defectors do you know of besides yourself, who would have knowledge of criminal activities in Scientology?

J: Pat Price

L: She's in Portland, Oregon

J: Mike Eldrich, somewhere in Florida.

L: What did Mike Eldrich do and what would he have criminal knowledge of?

J: He worked at Author Services. He was like their auditor and their core person for many years. He would have a vast amount of information if his eyes were open.

L: Specifically any areas that he might?

J: The raping of the Scientology organizations by Author Services.

L: Financial.

J: Financial irregularities, financial fraud. He would have a lot of information about that, and also, the corporate sham that's perpetrated by Scientology and that there is no such thing as separate corporations. There's just the appearance of it on paper. In practice and reality there isn't.

L: What else would Sue Price know?

J: Sue Price?

L: I mean not Sue Price, but Pat Price, beside the copyright fraud that you talked about?

J: Now that's an interesting question. She was L. Ron Hubbard's personal secretary. Therefore, she would receive separate instructions from him, as I would from my position in the organization. I'm not privy to everything that was sent to her.

L: Would she be aware of the vast amounts of cash that were delivered to L. Ron Hubbard?

J: No, but Mike Eldridge would.

L: Mike Eldridge. What other executives that have left Scientology would have knowledge about criminal activities in the organization?

J: Don Larson.

L: Don Larson. What type of?

J: Financial.

L: Financial, like moving money to foreign countries?

J: Moving money, extorting money, blackmailing....

L: Extortion, blackmail? Specifically when you say extortion, do you have a memory of something specific?

J: The mission holders.

L: Blackmail and extortion over the mission holders, to take their accounts away from them, these separate corporations?

J: Right.

L: Anything else that he would have knowledge about?

J: Bank transfers. He would have more specific detail about where the money goes.

L: Like foreign countries, foreign accounts?

J: Right. Who, what names are under.

L: Who is signatories...

J: Right.

L: Do you have any idea where he was last located?

J: I mean, he's on that video, I'm sure he can be found.

L: What other executives have left Scientology that would have knowledge of criminal activities?

J: Vicky and Rick Aznaran.

L: Vicky and Rick Aznaran, what would Vicky know?

J: Specifically about the black operations by Scientology, perpetrated on their own public, on staff members and the public, and people in general.

L: You mean, black operations on public on-lines in good standing. Covert operations on...

J: Right.

L: The people that weren't declared...

J: Let me put it in focus. Like we bug Holly and Bill Fennell, that kind of thing. Bugging staff members, doing these. These things that I spoke of.

L: Did they ever bug public persons who weren't staff members that you know of?

J: David Mayo.

L: OK.

J: I am not telling you anything new, I'm just answering the question in a different way, I've answered that before. You ask me what other executives, Vicky Aznaran, Rick Aznaran.

L: Would she know any more about the bugging, or any other criminal acts that Vicky Aznaran would have been privy to?

J: Maybe, maybe not. I think her affidavits before she was bought off speaks for themselves.

L: What about Rick Aznaran, what other criminal activity do you think he was involved with?

J: Financial, and black ops.

L: Black corporate operations, stealing records, things like that?

J: As I've said earlier, planting drugs on people, this kind of shit.

L: What other executives do you think that have left Scientology, Pat Broeker, what would be the kind of knowledge that he would have?

J: Corporate sham. Financial sham, just money on demand for L. Ron Hubbard. Cash, no checks. Cash.

L: Were there records kept of this cash?

J: None that I was privy to.

L: Would he know if the will of L. Ron Hubbard was authentic or not?

J: Yep.

L: He would know if the will or the estate, the last will and testament was a forgery or was a real thing? Who else would know if Hubbard's last will and testament was...

J: That's outside of the church?

L: Or inside the church.

J: Ray Mithoff would know, Norman Starkey would know, David Miscavige would know. As I said earlier in our interview, David Miscavige and Norman Starkey could imitate L. Ron Hubbard's signature perfectly. They showed it to me and laughed about it. That's the best I can answer that question.

L: Do you know any other executives who left Scientology who would have knowledge of Scientology's criminal activities?

J: No.

L: Mark Yeager?

J: Has left?

L: I didn't know if he was still in or not.

J: That's the point.

L: Does anyone know if he's still in?

J: Not me.

L: What about Terry Gamboa?

J: Terry Gamboa would know, Janis Grady would know.

L: They would have known?

J: Janis not so much, but Terry Gamboa would.

L: The type of criminal activity she would be most familiar with?

J: Finance, corporate shenanigans, corporate integrity.

L: Anyone else that you know or has heard of that has left that... Or let me ask this another way, when you were in, what factors were they most worried about?

J: Gerry Armstrong, Lawrence Wollersheim, that girl up in Portland, the Portland case...

L: Julie Titchbourne?

J: Julie Titchbourne?

L: Any other staff?

J: David Mayo.

L: David Mayo.

J: Bent Corydon.

L: Bent Corydon. OK. You have mentioned before that David Miscavige, Norman Starkey, Lyman Spurlock and Marty Rathburn are the four that are most knowledgeable and most involved in Scientology's past and current criminal activities. Beside those four, you also mentioned a...

J: Ben Shaw.

L: Ben Shaw. What other executives are...

J: Jeff Schriver, as far as the black ops thing. Gary Klinger.

L: Gary Klinger. The people that deal with the most secret stuff in Scientology.

J: Marine Bergatti.

L: Marine Bergatti, she's out of England?

J: Right.

L: She makes regular trips in and out of the United States, has a passport?

J: Wendell Reynolds would know finance. He could tell you, because he did the whole thing.

L: He would have knowledge related to the IRS.

J: Another secret little person in the back that's right up there, that's maybe a notch and a half below David Miscavige is Mark Ingber.

L: He would have knowledge about criminal activity?

J: Financial criminal activities.

L: Any of the other top executives that you know that would be the ones most knowledgeable or most involved in criminal activity going on inside of Scientology?

J: No, I think that covers it all.

L: Besides Marty Rathburn being the weakest link and most likely to possibly turn states' evidence or leave, rather than go to jail himself when they start prosecuting these crimes, is there anyone else in that group of people that you think would be the second most likely person that would say, "I'm not going to jail for all this."

J: Lyman Spurlock.

L: Lyman Spurlock, why do you say that?

J: Because he is loaded with crimes, he's loaded with doing the corporate, I mean, as a matter of fact, Dave Miscavige and Norman could easily point their finger to him and say, "He did it." It's not real to people how these people operate under orders, but, because by his hand a lot of things happened.

L: Do you think they would set it up that way that if something happened, you know, the old Mary Sue was not following policy, this is the renegade in the organization. Do you believe that if David Miscavige or Starkey could avoid the criminal charges and frame one of these other people, would they be loyal or would they frame them?

J: They would frame them in a heartbeat. Like I said, Scientology has a theory, a bent theory. We've seen L. Ron Hubbard's wife go to jail based on orders he was having her execute. So, there is no dignity.

L: So do you think that before, in earlier discussions, you said Scientology goes to great lengths to try to predict what's going to happen in a high risk situation and cover it in advance. Do you think that Miscavige, or Miscavige and Starkey, are the two top people – first Miscavige then Starkey, or is there someone else?

J: Starkey is like a satellite person. He doesn't have presence of mind, or the drive, or the intelligence, to do anything.

L: Who is second in command of Scientology right now under Miscavige?

J: I don't think there is one.

L: Miscavige is running...

J: He doesn't allow that.

L: Doesn't trust anyone else?

J: No.

L: So, do you believe that Miscavige may have pre-anticipated someone turning on him, set them up with a series of obvious clear criminal activity that could go right to that person immediately?

J: I think Lyman Spurlock is that person, as well as Marty Rathburn.

L: So they're the fall guys if you go after Miscavige, Miscavige will sacrifice them, come up with a story that they're renegades, they weren't following Scientology.

J: He may do 6 months with what they can get on him. It's all these other people, because their names are signed.

L: He induced them, he ordered them to do these crimes, their names are on it, they're going to the big time jail thing. David is the invisible guy.

J: We're leaving out the attorneys too. In this equation of who needs to go down, we're not looking at the fact that some of these attorneys, Larry Heller, the Lenske brothers, are

just as key players. If you're talking about somebody that's running Scientology, besides David Miscavige, they you need to look toward the attorneys.

L: There's a group of attorneys. Anyone besides Larry Heller and the Lenske brothers, who are knowledgeable about criminal activity of Scientology and/or involved in it? We mentioned Earl Cooley.

J: Earl Cooley was like a Johnny-come-lately. These other people have been doing it forever.

L: Do you think it's possible that they're even instructing Miscavige how to set these other guys up as fall guys if something goes wrong?

J: Sure.

L: Is it unreasonable for me to think they don't already have their fall-back plan when this comes up to sacrifice these people, because you've kind of expressed they anticipate everything?

J: I think, now we're just getting into theories, way beyond fact. You ask me what I think, I think that they have a plan to have a sacrifice, and I think their plan is not to be in the country.

L: So they'll set up some of these other lower level executives...

J: That know nothing, and people the government, whoever's investigating, could spend years talking to them because the fact of the matter is the don't know anything.

L: They're the fall guys when they flee. You mentioned a few days ago that you believe there was two version of OT VIII, one where Miscavige kind of freaked out, the first version and he was real worried, this guy quit Scientology after reading it. We discussed that may be in some form this version of OT VIII had been circulating where Hubbard claims to be the anti-Christ. One of the things that I'm interested in is, what auditors or CSs were around when the original OT VIII was being run on the Freewinds who could verify who were the people...

J: It's a very interesting question. I can't answer it.

L: So the only person that you knows for sure is David Miscavige?

J: David Miscavige, and Ray Mithoff, and David Mayo would know, I do believe he would know. No, David Mayo wouldn't know. He wouldn't know.

L: You don't know any of the Freewinds CSs or top auditors, because they would probably put their top auditors on that...

J: I don't know any of those people.

L: Who in Scientology, what executive, would be most likely to know the name? You mentioned that there was Miscavige said that, implied that they have someone inside the IRS working to help them to get their tax exempt status?

J: Two people that would know that, the three people that would know that would be Lyman Spurlock, no, four people that would know that: Lyman Spurlock, Dave Miscavige, Marty Rathburn and Norm Starkey.

L: What about the attorney who recruited the person?

J: I think that, that's a rhetorical question, if you recruit them you would know.

L: Do you know the name of that attorney who recruited the person inside the IRS?

J: No. That was on a need-to-know basis.

L: I'm going to throw out a couple of names here. There's a law firm called Williams and Connelly in Washington, D.C., and a guy by the name of Pfeiffer.

J: Yes.

L: You've heard that name?

J: That is probably the attorney that...

L: Gerald Pfeiffer. That contracted a former IRS agent..

J: Or somebody he knew did it.

L: That name is familiar with you?

J: Pfeiffer is a name that is familiar with me, as working on the IRS stuff.

L: Do you ever hear the name Monique Yingling, working on the IRS stuff?

J: Yes. Beyond just having some brain recognition of what that is, I can't go beyond that.

L: So it was those four people and the attorney who recruited this retired IRS guy to go and find somebody inside the IRS for them? OK. You mentioned David Miscavige would smile after he would do some very ruthless thing, like when he literally coerced Mary Sue Hubbard into giving up her family's fortune, which some people estimate at \$400 million.

J: I think it's way more than that.

L: Way more than \$400 million? OK. But, you said he was smiling for a week, just overjoyed that he had gotten this woman to give up all of her assets for \$100,000. Do you recall any other times that David Miscavige was particularly happy about one of his exploits?

J: Sure, when he got rid of Pat Broeker and me, and Annie Broeker.

L: How did you know he was happy about that?

J: I saw it, I saw it, I was sitting there.

L: He was overjoyed that he removed all three of you? Any other exploits that David Miscavige took great relish and joy in, and felt like he had accomplished something great for himself or Scientology when he had done something?

J: In the ways we are speaking of?

L: Could be in anything.

J: That's too general of a question. Let's take a break.

[BREAK]

L: I've said to you several times that at some point this and all part is going to go public.

J: By my own hand that's going to happen. I don't even care about this. I'm going to do it myself, on the Internet. I care about this, but I'm not counting on it.

L: OK. You're going to start talking yourself.

J: Immediately, starting tomorrow.

L: If you...

[SIDE OF TAPE ENDS]

L: What would you want the executives who have this knowledge about Scientology's criminal activity, or where people were harmed, or where people committed suicide, where's it all covered up, or there was a suicide that was covered up, what would you say to these executives who re out there, former Scientology executives, who are probably afraid to speak out and come forward and tell their piece of what happened in Scientology, what is happening? What would you say to them? What would you want them to know right now?

J: Firstly, I don't have a segregated message to different publics, or different markets of Scientology. I have a message for anyone that's involved in it, that has been hurt and woke up and saw it for what it was. What I would say to those people, each and every one of them is to please help roll back this blanket of fear. Please, let's stop them in their ability to decimate the lives of anyone simply because they have money, power, resources. This is America, this is a liberal country, and this is what we all strive to do, day in and day out, to keep this country the way it is. I would say to please stop being selfish, please stop thinking of our self, and think of humanity, America, your city, just as a whole. Let's just get this out of the way. It's not that hard to remove this illness because the people are so outlandish and so out of control. The key would be, if you've got information about these lawyers and how they work with these Scientologists to come up with all these crazy-ass schemes, well then step forward. It's everyone's responsibility to do something about this.

L: In law there's a concept called due diligence. When it applies to lawyers, it means that a lawyer has to use due diligence as an officer of the court to ensure that he is abiding by the ethics and acting in a lawful manner when he represents any client. He cannot engage in illegal activity, he can't even, if there's a reasonable situation where one could believe that there was something unlawful going on and he was being asked to participate in presenting false documents to the court, or presenting stolen documents, or being involved in stealing records, or intimidation of judges or intimidation of witnesses. Even if he had a reasonable feeling that this was going on, he couldn't turn his back and say, "Don't tell me about these criminal activities." Under due diligence, if he senses that there's crimes being committed, and he has an awareness of it, he had a responsibility as a lawyer and officer of the court, to report it or not be involved in it. If...

J: I haven't seen one that hasn't been compromised.

L: Not one single law firm that works for Scientology...

J: ...have I not seen compromise on this point of due diligence as you are talking about. I have seen everyone that I personally worked with, Joe Yanny, Tom Small, Heller, the Lenske brothers, Earl Cooley, I mean the list goes on and on. They are exposed to it, they immediately see it for what it is. John Peterson, may he rest in peace. The common thing that they say is, "I don't want to hear about that, or I don't want to know about that, or I will discuss this only with certain people." Beyond that, and I've said specifics already, beyond that, as a general statement, that's what I'm saying.

L: So, a lawyer who does not do due diligence exposes his insurance company to be liable for the criminal acts or damage that is incurred because he is saying "Don't tell me about this, I don't want to hear about it," or "We only discuss it with certain people." I want to go over the names of couple of lawyers and law firms that you may be aware of: Eric M. Lieberman..

J: Yep.

L: Rabinowitz, Bodine & Standard, Krinsky & Lieberman is the law firm.

J: Right.

L: Do you believe that he is knowledgeable about the criminal and illegal activities of Scientology?

J: Very much so.

L: He and his firm has failed to do anything to do the proper due diligence?

J: Yes. And, as an investigatory procedure, just find out, just audit this attorney firm, specifically concerning its relationship with Scientology and take a look at what they're paying for investigatory services.

L: What portion is investigation?

J: Yep, that will open up a wide door for a train to fly through.

L: Have you ever heard of a gentleman named Reeve E. Chud from Irvine, Cohen and Jessup a law firm?

J: No.

L: A Meade Emory or Leon Misterek of Elsword, Patten, Fleming, Hartung and Emory, out of Seattle? They are involved in setting up the tax exempt status for Scientology.

J: No, I'm not familiar with them.

L: Christopher Cobb.

J: Yep. Chris Cobb, he's got them long teeth. Yes, he's another one that was very similar to John Peterson, but I think he got retired. But he is very knowledgeable about the insanity that the church does to former members, current members, or other critics of Scientology.

L: So, he would fall into that category...

J: He's one of them OSA attorneys. He's right on the Invest lines.

L: He's one of the ore dirt attorneys.

J: Very much so.

L: Knows about the criminal activities, probably was involved in them.

J: Very much so.

L: Lawrence E. May of Valenci and Rose.

J: Not familiar.

L: Tom Small?

J: Yep, familiar. Trademark attorney, copyright attorney. As I stated earlier, he may have had some dealings to do with those false copyright filings.

L: He may have known they were false, he participated.

J: Another person who his firm, who has since left because he was gay and everybody made fun of him. I don't remember his name.

L: An attorney of Michael Wells of Maury and Ota? Is that familiar?

J: No.

L: How about, OK, Gerald Pfeiffer of Williams and Connolly, would be involved in attorneys who do not do due diligence and have knowledge of criminal activities.

J: Yes, I believe so.

L: Monique Yingling of Yingling and Yingling?

J: Now, as I said, I have only heard her name. I have never made with contact with her or have any specific information that comes to mind about her.

L: OK. Is it your belief, after your work with Scientology attorneys, that they don't work for Scientology unless they're dirty?

J: Yes.

L: In other you don't get the big fees unless you're willing to go along with what Miscavige is basically ordering and doing?

J: They've been turned down by firms like, "No, I don't want nothing to do with you."

L: You know other law firms...

J: ...that refuse them, yes.

L: Many law firms refuse them?

J: I'd say it may be. There was one all the way down at the end of Sunset in Hollywood that was a big firm, that didn't want anything to do with them. I know it's common when they're researching firms, you know, you mention Scientology and they're like out the door. There are many of them that say, "No."

L: They want nothing to do with them, they know about these practices.

OK. You mentioned that David Miscavige has a safe full of gold and silver bars and precious coins. And you mentioned that there's a secret corporation that nobody know about.

J: Another one besides CSC.

L: Another one. And there's bank accounts that nobody knows about besides a few people at the top of Scientology, who knows how many millions of dollars there are in these, and who the signatories are?

J: The people that know where all the money is in Scientology are Maurine Bergatti, Mark Ingber, David Miscavige, Lyman Spurlock.

L: Do you think anyone of them knows all of it?

J: I think the ones that I just said all know.

L: You mentioned that the top people with the vacations and they money they're getting and all the gratuities they're taking off the top of Scientology could be making as much as \$500,000 a year to \$700,000 a year. If Miscavige is letting those people take that amount of money and he's got a safe full of gold and silver bars and precious coins, would it be unreasonable to think that he's taking more than they area?

J: That's all hypothetical, speculation, and I'm going to stick to the facts.

L: Just wanted to see if you have an idea, if you don't, you don't. There's a couple of other attorneys: Keith True, has his own law firm, Bridge Publications.

J: Never heard of him.

L: Johnson & O'Meara.

J: That sounds familiar.

L: Leo Johnson, Nancy O'Meara.

J: What did they do?

L: They're members of the board of COST. Sherman Lenske, we talked about him.

J: This 1981... See, prior to me becoming an international executive, I was just a person that worked at Flag on technical lines, and didn't understand what MCCS was about, or all that corporate sort, all those missions, I was just not a part of it. By the time I did become part of international management, not only was it still not part of my areas of control, it had pretty much happened, and they were just tweaking it a little bit by making these other corporations, CST, and this other one that I mentioned about.

L: Secret corporations somewhere in California, that they transfer everything to.

J: If something happens to CSC then it goes to that corporation.

L: What the IRS doesn't know about is, see, Scientology set up a deal with the IRS where one corporation leases the copyrights and trademarks to another one, and one of the things the IRS was very concerned with, as best I understand it, is that the assets were moving from corporation to corporation, and they were very upset that the assets would go back to COST. What you're telling me is that there's even a back-up secret corporation beyond CST where the assets will go if problem?

J: Yeah, and I don't know exactly how secret it is, I know it has to be registered. It can't be a corporation that exists without it being registered. But there was one that was outside of my knowledge, that was set up by the attorneys, as is all the other ones, to keep moving money around.

L: Did you ever hear anyone speak of the total net worth of Scientology? Anyone ever say, "We're worth 2 billion, 5 billion, 3 billion."

J: No, we kind of went over this the last time we did this.

L: Just checking. Have you heard anything about a bullet proof, bomb-proof bunker being built, they're nicknaming it The Fort?

J: Yes, there's a video about it by Norman Starkey. That specifically, with the titanium and explosion proof, and radiation proof, and on and on and on and on. This is on plates with gold on them, all the stuff is on plates etched in gold.

L: Is that the Mendocino storage site that's dug into the side of a, up in Mendocino?

J: I believe it is, I believe that's where CST is up there.

L: Mendocino county, a little town right on the...

J: Up in the mountains.

L: Have you heard anything about, there's some new construction of a bullet proof, bomb proof, bunker, they're calling it The Fort in Hemet?

J: No.

L: Is your belief they would build something like this just because they're afraid of a nuclear war, or...

J: Speculation. I don't know what they hell they're doing it for.

L: Do you know anything about an attorney by the name of Charles Purcell?

J: That name sounds familiar, but I don't, I have nothing to relate it to.

L: Is there any other act, criminal or otherwise that you think that I have not asked you about? I hate to make this sound like a sec check question. I sounds a little bit like that.

J: And you know I'm tired of it.

L: I really need to know Jesse, have you remembered anything in the past few days that is something about Scientology that people should know about that's either dangerous or criminal, or just wrong, or just vicious, or cruel, or ruthless, whatever you want to call it, that in your experience when you were in really stuck in your mind as "This is just way over the line?"

J: There is, there's nothing new. I've said everything to the best of my ability.

L: Let's finish up here. We are done.

[END OF TAPE]